

André Oudin
1622

A
GRAMMAR
SPANISH AND
ENGLISH:

OR
A BRIEFE AND
compendious Method, teaching to
reade, write, speake, and pronounce
the SPANISH TONGUE.

COMPOSED IN FRENCH
by *Cesar Oudin*, and by him the third time
corrected and augmented.

Englished, and of many wants
supplied, by *I.W.*

Who hath also tranflated out of Spanish the
five Dialogues of *Iuan de Luna, Cast.* which
are annexed to the Grammar.



LONDON,
Printed by *John Haviland* for *Edward Blount*, and are
to be sold at the signe of the blacke Beare in
Pauls Church-yard, 1622.



TO
THE RIGHT
HONOURABLE

THOMAS Lord *Howard*, Maltre-
uers, Mowbray, Segraue, Bruz,
Clun, and *Oswestrie*, Earle of *Arun-*
dell, and *Surrey*, Earle Marshall of
ENGLAND, Knight of the Noble
order of the *Garter*, and one of
his *Majesties* most Ho-
norble *Privy Councill*.



A decorative woodcut-style illustration of a coiled serpent with its head raised, showing fangs and a forked tongue. The serpent is rendered in a dark, textured style against a lighter background.

The Epistle

assumed boldnesse, to make choice
of your Honour; knowing that mens
labours in these daies are much
ynder-valued, and indeed of no rec-
koning, without the iudicious to cen-
sure, and generous to countenance.
Without these, what difference
were there betwixt fables, and
truths? Wretched Pamphlets, and
noble Poems? Since then this age
affoords so many of Æsops Cocks,
that prefer graine before pearle ;
and finding these two to concurre in
you, namely iudgement to deter-
mine, and vertue to incourage, I
intreat these may mediate betwixt
my rashnesse to dare, and your
Lordships noblenesse to pardon :
who haue beene a Mecenas to

Arts,

Dedicatory.

Arts, and haue to the world
mademanifest (which makes me
so plaine without complement) your
forwardnesse in the seruice of your
King and Countrey; neither in hope
of praise, expectation of reward, or
least ayme of Ambition, but meere-
ly in your vertue. Since all that
know you know so much, what I
from them haue learnt, giue mee
leaue to acknowledge. That the
worke were worthy your Honours
patronage I could wish : wherein
it fails I can but blush for the want:
Accept it I beseech you, being the
fruits of my loue, who am thus em-
boldned from the words of Helen:
Quis enim succenset Amanti?
and the rather, since it comes free-

The Epistle Dedicatory.

ly, and without expectation of any other returne from your Lordship, then your noble grace and fauour, which but in the smalleſt measure to attaine, I ſhall euer remaine

Your HONOVRs
humbly deuoted,

I. W.

THE PREFACE TO the students of the SPA- NISH Tongue.



Entlemen (for ſuch com-
monly they be, who are
addiected to the learning of
forraine languages) I pre-
ſent you with a Grammar ; and if you
anke of what country ſhe is, I anſwer of
Castile, but brought vp in France, for that
was the tongue ſhe ſpoke, before I tu-
tor'd her in the English. To be plaine,
lighting by chance vpon this Gram-
mar in French, I diligenty peruſed it,
and perceiuing all things therein, to be
of great profit and furtherance to the
speedy obtaining of the Spanish
tongue, my owne iudgement perſwa-
ded me it was a good one, being ſecon-
ded by the opinion of diuers others.

THE PREFACE.

Wherefore importuned to translate it, that our English nation, although somewhat further distant, might as soonearriue in *Castile* as the Frenchmen, I halfe consented thereunto. But my expectation was deceived; for falling in hand with it, I found it impossible to retaine the name of a meere translation, and be made perfect for the English: which as it differeth more from the Spanish, then doth the French, so it requireth in some points, more rules and obseruations; the which I trust I haue sufficiently supplied: And againe in some few, lesse, where I haue omitted what was altogether friuolous and impertinent. Neither could it be directly translated for another reason, which is, that all the Spanish parts, examples, and whatsoeuer else, being to cohere, and haue as much correspondency with the English, as it had with the French, it was requisite therein to regard onely the Spanish, and wholly to neglect the

THE PREFACE.

translating of the said French; which doubtles would haue produced a great company of errors. So that there was not so much skil required in the French to translate this Grammar, as in the Spanish to make a fit coherence betwixt the same and our English tongue.

As touching the course and order obserued, it is according to the Author; sauing that in the Verbs I haue somewhat (to the better I hope) altered it, and haue omitted two or three Verbes in a manner superfluous, for being Regulars, and supplied their roomes with as many indeed Irregular; wherewith I suppose that neither you nor any, can iustly bee offended. And to giue you the better satisfaction, I haue coniugated all the Verbes Irregulars, throughout euery Mood and Tense, with the English to them, which cannot I thinke, be found in any other Grammar extant. This at the first seemed to me sufficient, but comming to reuiew what I had lately written,

THE PREFACE.

written, I considered how great an inconuenience was to follow for want of the true accent, and therefore willingly tooke vpon me to put an Acute as well vpon all the Spanish words in the Grammar, of two or more syllables (vnlesse any haue escaped by chance) as on all the Tenses singularly and plurallly of euery Verbe that is coniugated therein: So that if it be wanting in any person, it must be made vpon the first letter of the word, being a capitall vowel, which could not conueniently be printed with an accent. And although this generall Accenting of words be commonly omitted by others, yet I esteeme it as a thing most requisite and materiall. For an euill habit is sooner at the first admitted, then afterward omitted; and he that in the beginning shall mis-accent words, will finde it more difficult to correct himselfe, then hee imagineth. And for that cause I was willing to reade a proofe of euery sheet before

THE PREFACE.

before it was printed off, correcting whatsoeuer I could finde erroneous: and yet (as what Impression was euer knowne without?) I cannot warrant but that some faults or other haue escaped; which if they be not many, I presume my diligence in seeking to prevent them, will be a strong prouocation to pardon them.

Here was the Grammar finished, but my desire to further you what I could, ended not so soone; for knowing well by experience, how much the reading of Dialogues aideth to the perfection of a vulgar Tongue, I was perswaded that my desire could no way be so fully accomplished, as in translating those of *Juan de Luna*, being no lesse profitable then full of delight, and as full of delight as wittie. His booke containeth in all twelue Dialogues, but his owne are no more then fise, the rest being by him onely corrected, and already in English: which fise I haue translated and

THE PREFACE.

and annexed to the end of the Grammar, and haue likewise accented all the words thereof, wherein I thought could be any possibilitie of erring.

Thus far (Gentlemen) I haue aduentured, and for your good expoſed my ſelfe to the common censure, which in this calumnious age, is ſeldome otherwife then detrac̄tive. But let it paſſe; the booke is now yours: if you accept it thankfully, I ſhall account my trauell well bestowed, and the profit which I am confident you will receiue thereby, ſhall be to me an ample remuneration for the ſame.

I. W.

A Table of the Chapters, and some particularities contained in this Grammar.

Of the Letters, and their pronunciation.	Pag. 1
untill pag. 8.	
Of the Article.	Pag. 8
The declining of the Masculine, and Feminine article.	Ibid.
Of the Neuter article.	P. 9
The use of the Masculine article el.	ibid.
Of the Feminine article la.	P. 10
Of the article lo.	P. 11
Of Nounes, and of their Genders.	ibid.
Of the terminations of the Plurall number,	P. 14
Of the declining of Nounes substantives, as well proper as common.	P. 16
Of Nounes adiectives, and their declining.	P. 19
Of Mucho, Poco, and Harto, adiectives.	P. 22
Of Nounes derivatiues.	ibid.
Of the termination of Nounes diminutiues.	P. 25
Of Nounes of number, and their terminations.	P. 26
Of Pronounes, and their nature.	P. 30
The declining of the Pronounes, from	P. 31. to P. 35
Of	

The Contents.

Of the Pronounes possessives.	p. 35
Of the use of the Pronounes Guyo, and cuya, from Of the pronunciation of Vuestra merced.	p. 37. to p. 40
Of other Pronounes demonstratiues.	p. 40
Of the signification of el, not being an article.	p. 41
Of the Pronounes Ambos, and Entrambos.	p. 44
Of the Pronounes Relatiues.	p. 45
Of the word quiera in composition.	p. 46
Of the Reciprocals me, te, se.	p. 49
Of the Verbe.	ibid.
The declining of the Verbes Hauer and Tener.	p. 51
The declining of the Verbes Ser and Estar.	p. 56
How to forme the Tenses in euery Coniugation.	p. 67
How to decline a Verbe of the first Coniugation.	p. 75
How to decline a Verbe of the second Coniugation.	p. 76
How to decline a Verbe of the third Coniugation.	p. 82
The declining of the Verbe Holgar.	p. 87
Of the Verbe Dar.	p. 93
The declining of the Verbe Querer.	p. 98
The declining of the Verbe Poder.	ibid.
The declining of the Verbe Hazer.	p. 103
The declining of the Verbe Poner.	p. 107
The declining of the Verbe Saber.	p. 111
The declining of the Verbe Traer.	p. 115
The declining of the Verbe Caber.	p. 119
The declining of the Verbe Dezir.	p. 123
The declining of the Verbes Dormir and Morir.	p. 128
The declining of the Verbes yr and Andar.	p. 132
The declining of the Verbe Venir.	p. 137
The difference betweene Yo he venido, and yo soy ve- nido.	p. 142
	p. 146

The Contents.

Of the composition of me, te, se, le, la, lo, les, las, los, with the Infinitives of Verbes.	p. 147
Of the letter d, of the second person of the Imper- ative, which is transposed before the articles.	ibid.
How d, in the Imperative, and s, in the first person plurall of the Imperative and Future, is cut off by Apocope.	ibid.
How the letter r, is changed into l, in Infinitives, being ioyned to the article.	ibidem.
Of Verbes Passives.	p. 148
Of Verbes Impersonals.	p. 149
Of Gerunds.	p. 150
Of Participles.	p. 152
Of the Aduerbes.	ibidem.
Of the Aduerbes of Time.	p. 153
Of the Aduerbs of place.	p. 155
Aduerbs of number.	p. 158
Aduerbs of quantitie.	p. 160
Aduerbs of qualitie.	p. 162
Aduerbs of negation.	p. 163
Aduerbs of affirmation.	p. 164
Aduerbs of wishing.	p. 165
Aduerbs of admonishing, or exhorting.	p. 166
And other qualitie of Aduerbs till page 173	
Of the Prepositions.	p. 173
Prepositions seruing to the Accusatiue case.	p. 175
Of the Prepositions Por and Para.	p. 177
Of the Coniunctions.	p. 179
Of the Interiections.	p. 182
The difference of pronunciation betweene áy Verbe Impersonall, and áy' Aduerbe of place.	p. 183
How the letter s, is lost before r, and the said r, doubled.	p. 186
Of	

The Contents.

Of the word Hiddepita.

ibidem.

Of the word Hidalgo.

p. 187

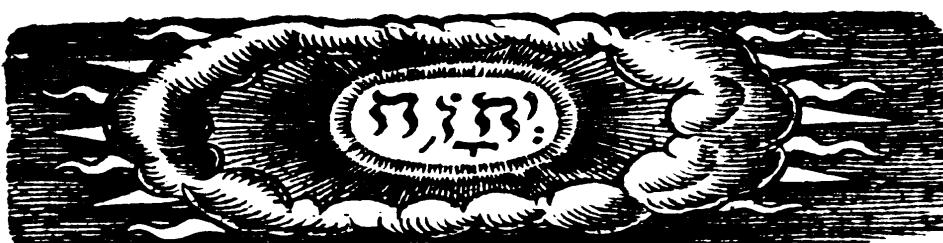
Of the Comparisons proper to the Spanish tongue.

page 189

See the rest, which is of words put downe in an Alphabetical order, from page 194. to the page 209.

Of the accent that ought to be made in the Spanish pronunciation, page 109. unto the end.

An end of the Table.



A SPANISH GRAMMAR, explicated in English.

And first concerning the Letters, and their Pronunciation.



Haue not thought it expedient to detaine the Readers with definitions and diuisions of GRAMMAR, for so much as those that are learned haue nothing to doe therewith ; and such as can only reade the vulgar English, would profit themselves but little by the same. It shall suffice therefore to explaine and lay open so much as shall be possible, the difficultie of the Spanish pronunciation, the which (as a principall part of a Language) consisteth in knowing first how to expresse the letters, next the syllables, and lastly the words. I shall hereafter come to the parts of speech, the which with the best of my skill I doe intend to explicate. It is then behouefull to forme in the first place a Spanish Alphabet, which is as followeth.

A, a, b, c, ç, d, e, f, g, h, ch, j, i, y, ll, ll, m, n, ñ, o, p, q, r, s, t, u, v, x, z.

Now all the difficultie and difference that is betwixt the Spanish and the English tongue, consisteth in these thirteene letters.

b, g, d, q, h, ch, j, ll, ñ, u vowel, v consonant, x and z.

The first is *b*, which is indifferently written for *v* consonant, and reciprocally the one for the other, being both alike in pronunciation, not commonly sounded as *b*, or *v*, in English, but rather betweene both, not ioyning the lips so hard one against another as we doe, but leauing some little passage free for the breath betwixt them. And for prooфе hereof, they both are many times found written in the selfe-same words, as *Sábana* and *Sávana*, *Sábio* and *Sávio*, and so almost of all. Neuerthelesse it is to be noted that this is before the vowel, and not before the consonant liquids *l* and *r*, for they should not properly write *Havlár* for *Hablár*, nor *Hómvre* in stead of *Hómbre*, which would bring another inconuenience: notwithstanding that, it behoueth to sound the said *b* as in other words before the vowel.

The second is *ç*, called in Spanish *c con cedilla*, or *cerilla*, which is not placed but before *a, o*, and *u*, and it is of like force with the ordinary *c* put before *e* & *i*, or with the letters *s*: and those are deceiued who in writing Spanish, place the said *ç* before *e* or *i*; or at leastwise it is superfluous.

There are diuers Spanish words found written by *sc*, and by *c* only, but their pronunciation is alike, as *merescér* and *merecer*.

The third is *d*, which hath his proper sound in the beginning

beginning of words, as *Digo*, *dicho*, *dádiva*. But in middle syllables, and in the end, it is pronounced like *th* in English, as *Cadéna* a chaine, *Virtúd* virtue; say *Cathéna*, and *Virtúth*: except it be in some words that come from the Latine, as *Prudéntia*, and when it followeth the letter *n*, as *Quándo*, *Amándo*, *Leyéndo*; and not *Quántbo*, *Amántho*, *Leyéntho*.

The fourth is *g* before *e* and *i*, the pronunciation wherof is formed in the palate of the mouth, doubling the end of the tongue vpward, and pushing it downe towards the throat, and it hath some affinitie with *þ* in English. But before *a, o*, and *u*, it hath the same pronunciation as in other Languages.

The fift is *h*, which in the beginning and middle of words, if *u* and some other vowel (being commonly *e*) doe follow it, *hu* is then pronounced like *w* in English, as *Huelgo*, *vihuéla*, *huéuo*, *huéfso*, *huérfano*, *huésped*, and diuers others; all which are sounded as *Welgo*, *viwela*, *wéuo*, *wéfso*, *wcrfano*, *wespéd*, &c. Furthermore, *h* is left vnprounounced in the beginning of many words, as in *Hauér*, *Hábito*, *kómbre*, *humildád*, *kónrra*, and diuers others: and againe in many it is vsed with an aspiration, as in *Hazér*, *higo*, *hábla*, *hígado*, and a great company more. But seeing there can no perfect rule be giuen, teaching when *h* is vsed with his aspiration, and when not, I referre it to vse, for but with little practise, it will seeme no difficultie at all.

The sixt is *ch*, which is pronounced as in the English word *Charitic*, or *Choice*, as *Múcho*, *Mucháho*, *Burrácho*, and the like. Excepting such words as come from the Latine, as *Monarchía*, *Tetrarchía*, *Ierarchía*.

The seuenth is *j* consonant (which the Spaniards call

call *jota*) and they pronounce it almost like *Shota*, doubling the end of the tongue, as I haue already said in the letter *g*, and sounding it in the throat, and not as *yota*, in three syllables.

It is requisite to note, that there is great affinitie of pronunciation betweene the letter *g*, put before *e* or *i*; the *jota*, which is set before *a*, *o*, and *u*, seldome before *e*, and neuer before *i*; and the *x*, which is ioyned to all the vowels. For I haue obserued that words are indifferently written by these three letters, as *tixéras*, *tigéras*, and *tijéras*, which signifieth Cisers: *Trabájo*, I haue read *traváxo*, and *trabáxo*, trauell. And the said affinitie may easily be perceiued, or at leastwise that of the *g* and *jota*, for so much as when a verbe is found written with *g* before *e* or *i* in the infinitive mood, the vowell changing into some other, that is, into *a* or *o*, in the other moods of the said verbe, it is likewise behouefull to change the *g* into *j*. Example, *Cogér* Infinitive, maketh in the Optatiue and Subiunctiue *Cója*, and not *Cóga*; *Elegír* is changed into *Elíja*, *regir* into *rija*, &c.

I will furthermore say that touching the two others *i* and *y*, (both which are pronounced as double *ee* in English) they ought not to be confounded in writing the one for the other, but it is requisite to know that *i* simple is euermore ioyned to consonants in the same syllable before or after, as in this word *Infinito*; sometimes also it maketh a syllable apart, as *Imitár*, and it is not put into a diphthong, vnlesse it be in the following of some consonant, as in *Grácia* and *Glória*. But *y* is ioyned to other vowels to make a diphthong, as in *yazer*, *yugo*, *mayor*, and others; and sometimes it maketh a syllable apart, as in *Leydo*, and *Oýdo*, which are trisyllables; sometimes also it is put with the

the consonant, but it must be before it, and at the beginning of the word, as in *yzquierdo*, *yçár*, *yr*, and some few others.

The eighth is *ll*, being pronounced both in the beginning and in the middle of words, as if the latter *l* were an *i*; as for example, *llága* a wound, which is vttered as though it were written *liága*, yet in such wise conioyned, that it is made but two syllables; so *llamár*, *llorár*, *batálla*, *querélla*, pronounced as if they were written *liamár*, *liorár*, *batália*, *querélia*. But it is to be noted that *ll* is found in some words that are rather Latine or Italian, then Spanish, as *Illústre*, *exellénte*, *Camillo*, *Túllio*, in which it ought not to be pronounced; and they that write well, set them downe thus, *Ilústre*, *exelénte*, *Camilo*, *Túlio*, with single *l*, which is farre the better.

The ninth is *ñ*, called *ntilde*, or *n* with a tittle, sounded as if an *i* were set after it, as *Epañol* a Spaniard, in which word Spaniard the pronunciation may easily be perceiued. It is sometimes written with double *nn*, but it is for want of this character *ñ*, so that it is not found but in such books as are printed out of *Spaine*. The Spaniards moreouer doe not double any of the consonants, excepting *x* and *s*, and sometimes *m*, before which they put for the most part an *n*, as *Emendár* in stead of *emmendár*.

The tenth is *u* vowell, the which in Spanish, and almost in all other Languages, is pronounced as *oo* in English.

The eleventh is *v* consonant, which is in nothing different from *b*, as I haue said before.

The twelfth is *x*, which is sounded very rudely before a vowell, and somewhat more then *jota*, although there be very great affinitie betweene them, but

but the *x* is uttered more in the throat, being so likewise at the end of a word, as *carcax*, *relóx*, &c.

Note that when *x* is in a word compounded of the preposition *ex*, it then retaineth its naturall pronunciation, which is common to other Languages. I haue read *escépto* for *excepto*, for *x* is commonly sounded as *s* if a consonant follow it.

The last is *z*, which sometimes is pronounced more rudely then *c* or *s*, but commonly it hath the sound of *c*, and I haue oftentimes seene it written *hacér* for *hazér*, *liénço* for *liénzo*, *báço* substantiue, which signifieth the spleene, or *báço* adiectiue, that is to say, browne, as *pán báço*, browne bread: I haue seene it written *vázo*, putting the *v* for *b*, and *z* for *c*; and whosoeuer looketh into the words that end with the said *z*, shall finde it differ in nothing from the *c*, when it endeth a word likewise, except it be pronounced with a graue accent.

As touching the rest of the letters, they neither differ from the English, nor other foraine Languages, only the *q* is pronounced as *coo* in English. It will not be from the purpose to declare in this place that *gn* in Spanish is not sounded as in French, but as if the *g* were separated from the *n*; as *Digno* shall be read *dig-no*: and the Spaniards themselues oftentimes leaue out the *g*, putting *díno* for *digno*, *sinificár* in stead of *significár*. The *r* is pronounced very hard, as *árre*, and the *s* as *éffe*. I will adde hereunto moreouer, that the Spaniards neuer write *t* hauing the nature of *c*, as in these words, *grácia*, *acíon*, *dición*, *intención*, and infinite more, you shall not finde *t* before the *i*, for that the said *t* is always pronounced in one manner, as in these words, *Títiro*, *Tibério*, *Tiráno*, &c.

Hauing now spoken concerning the letters simple, it

it is not requisite to omit the pronunciation of these syllables, *gué* and *gui*, *qué* and *qui*, which are not sounded as in other Languages: the two first are pronounced as in the English words *guest* and *guide*, provided that the *s* be sounded as I haue said: and the two latter, which are *qué* and *qui*, be pronounced like *ke* and *kee* in English; as for example, *quebrár* to breake, *quitár* to take away, sound them like *kebrár*, *keetár*. From *gué* are excepted these that follow, wherein *u* is sounded.

Aguélo, a Grandfather.

Ciguéña, a Storke.

Aguéro, a Soothsayer.

Guéro, an addle egge.

Verguenga, shame.

Siguéncia, a Cities name in Spaine.

Garguéro, the wesand, or wind-pipe.

Halaguéño, fawning, flattering, or he that flattereth.

Pedigüéño, an earnest suiter, or wanton.

Regueldo, a belching, and I belch, from *Regoldár*.

And

Deguéllo, I behead, from *Degollár*: changing the *o* of the infinitiue mood into *ue*, in some tenses and persons of their coniugation, as it shall be seene when we come to speake of the Verbes.

Also those Verbes that haue *guár* in the infinitiue mood, doe follow the same exception, where in their Aorists they are found to haue *gué*, as *menguár* *mengué*, *aguár* *agué*, *fraguár* *fragué*, *auerriguár* *auerrigué*, and others, all which are pronounced with the sound of the *u*, as is said.

From *gui*, I haue not found any excepted but *arguýr*, pronounced as *argooýr*.

It is also to be noted, that there are some words which

8 *A Grammar Spanish and English.*
which be written by *quá*, as *quáfi*, *qualidád*, wherein
the *u* is not sounded, but *cáfi*, and *calidád*; also this
is their true Orthography.

Of the Article.

HAving spoken concerning the Letters, we must now come vnto the words, which are the parts of Speech, the first whereof is the Article which is declined alone, and serueth to the declination of the other parts declinable, not knowing the variation of the cases by any other meanes then by the same.

It is therefore requisite to note, that there are three Articles, and of three genders as the Nounes, although concerning Nounes there are found in vulgar Languages but two, the masculine and the feminine. The Spaniards haue an Article of the neuter gender, but not Nounes, or at leastwise not Substantiues. The masculine is *el*, the feminine *la*, and the neuter *lo*, and they are thus declined.

The declination of the Masculine Article.

	Singular.	Plurall.
Nom.	<i>el</i> , the.	<i>los</i> .
Gen.	<i>del</i> , of the.	<i>de los</i> .
Dat.	<i>al</i> , to the.	<i>à los</i> .
Accus.	<i>el</i> , <i>al</i> , the.	<i>los</i> & <i>à los</i> .
Ablat.	<i>del</i> , from the.	<i>de los</i> .

Of the Feminine Article.

	Singular.	Plurall.
Nom.	<i>la</i> .	<i>las</i> .
Gen.	<i>de la</i> .	<i>de las</i> .
Dat.	<i>à la</i> .	<i>à las</i> .
Accus.	<i>la</i> and <i>à la</i> .	<i>las</i> & <i>à las</i> .
Ablat.	<i>de la</i> .	<i>de las</i> .

The

A Grammar Spanish and English.

The Neuter Article.

Singular.

Nom.	<i>lo</i> , it.	<i>lo</i> is not declined
Gen.	<i>de lo</i> , of it.	in the plurall.
Dat.	<i>al</i> <i>o</i> , to it.	
Accus.	<i>lo</i> , it.	
Ablat.	<i>de lo</i> , from it.	

As for this article *lo*, it cannot be applied to a Noun, but rather seemeth to be a Pronoune Demonstratiue, or a Relatiue of the neuter gender, which is not ioyned to any Noun Substantiue or Adiectiue, so that there is no need of a neuter article in the Language, which admitteth no Nounes of the neuter gender.

Examples shall be giuen hereof when we speake of the Pronounes in generall, where we will shew it to be sometimes a Demonstratiue, and sometimes a Relatiue.

The use of Articles, and first of the Masculine.

The article *el* is put euer with a Noun of the masculine gender, beginning either with a vowel, or a consonant, and sometimes it is ioyned to Nounes feminines, and principally to those that begin with *a*, and that to auoid the ill sound of the meeting of two *a*, as for example.

El áima, *el agua*, sound better then if one should say, *la áima*, *la agua*, in which of necessitie the mouth must be opened very wide (as when one gapeth) by reason of doubling the *a*.

The aforesaid article *el*, turned backward, which maketh *le*, is oftentimes put at the end of a Verbe, and then

then it is a Relatiue, as *llamádle*, *dezídle*, which signifie in English, call him, tell him.

It is fit to declare here that the Spaniards haue a manner of speaking by the third person for the second, vsing this article *el*, and *le*, in stead of *vos*, or *vuestra mercé d*; whereof *vos* is a meane word, and as little vsed as *thou* in English: but this title of *vuestra mercé d*, being too much for all sorts of persons, they haue a meane which is this third person, taking the article *el* and *le*, as I haue said. Example: *Si el quíere hazérlo*; *y el que ha dicho*? *que le dígo*? *que le díxo*? Which may be said in English: If you will doe it; And you, what haue you said? what doe I say to you? what said he to you?

And they not only vsed this manner of speaking in the third person with the article *el* or *le*, but without the same, and being vnderstood with the verbe: or also *vuestra mercé d* may be vnderstood, hauing repeated it once or twice in a speech, and is not alwayes materiall to reiterate it; as also in writing it is no grace at all to vsit ouer-often.

It is likewise to be considered that this title *vuestra mercé d*, is not so common in Spanish, as the Spaniards themselues doe vsit it being out of their owne Country, but that it is rather an affected curtesie, then a true obseruation of their language. It is to be beleued that they vsit this fashion of speaking in the third person, for neither to extoll nor abase such as they speake to: but aboue all, it is meet to haue a respect to the qualitie of those we speake to, whether they be better or meaner then our selues.

Of the Feminine article la.

The article *la* is euer put before Nounes feminines, as *la mugér*, *la casa*, excepting such as begin with *a*, as

as is said before, the which haue the masculine article *el*.

This article put after a Verbe, assumeth the nature of a Pronoune Relatiue, so well as the article *le*.

Of the article lo.

Although I haue aboue said that *lo* is not an article, not being found in the Language any Nounes neuters Substantiues, whereto it might be applied, notwithstanding there are some Nounes Adiectiues made Substantiues, to the which it is ioyned, as *tódo lo buéno*, *tódo lo malo*, all the good, or all that which is good, all the euill, or all that which is euill.

It is also put with the Verbe, where it seemeth to be superfluous, and then it is a Relatiue or Demonstratiue: example, *Quánto dixéres tódo lo appruéuo*, I approue all that which thou shalt say, or to speake by the same phrase, All that which thou shalt say, I doe approue it all; wherein is perceiued in two places the force of *lo*, for in stead of *Quánto*, it might be said, *Tódo quánto dixéres appruéuo*, and that for so much as *lo* is both demonstratiue and relatiue.

Of Nounes, and of their Genders.

Cæsar Oudin hath spoken but little concerning the Genders of Nounes, passing it sleightly ouer with this excuse, that they are seldom put without an Article, or Adiectiue, whereby their Gender may be knowne: for (saith he) by the termination it would be a matter very difficult to distinguish them.

Notwithstanding I haue thought it conuenient to speake somewhat concerning this effect, for that I haue obserued Substantiues very often (although he saith but seldom) to be put without either Adiectiue or

or Article, and many times with an Adiectiue seruing both to the Masculine and Feminine, or else with *mi*, *tu*, *su*, and their plurals *mis*, *tus*, *sus*, which are common to both Genders: and therefore I haue taken paines to gather the most compendious Rules I could possible for this purpose, and haue read ouer seuerall bookes, the better to confirme them, excepting all such words, as I haue found therein to be contrary vnto them.

The first Rule.

Note therefore that all Nounes, of whatsoeuer termination they be, including the signification of the Male, are Masculines. Whereunto shall be added those that end in *e*, *i*, *o*, *u*, *l*, *n*, *r*, *s*, *x*, as *mónte*, *maravedí*, *sombréro*, *impetu*, *papél*, *coraçon*, *dolór*, *lúnes*, *relóx*.

These following are excepted, which although they end, as we haue said, are Feminines.

From *e* are excepted, *árte*, *áne*, *cálle*, *córte*, *corriénte*, *costúmbre*, *fuénte*, *génte*, *hámbre*, *léche*, *lláne*, *lúmbre*, *muénte*, *náne*, *niéne*, *nóche*, *párte*, *puénte*, *sángre*, *serpiénte*, *suénte*, &c.

From *i* or *y*, I haue not read any excepted, sauing only *léy*.

From *o*; *máno* and *náso*. From *u*, I cannot finde any excepted.

From *l*; *cál*, *canál*, *sál*, *cárcel*, *hiél*, *miél*, *piél*, &c.

From *n*; *Opinón*, *raçon*, *sazón*, *órden*, *sartén*, *ymágen*; and those that end in *ción*, *sión*, and *ssión*, as *Contrición*, *prisión*, *remissión*.

From *r*; *Colór*, *flór*, and *már*, which is sometimes written, *el már*.

From *s* and *x*, I haue not found any excepted.

The

The second Rule.

All Nounes of what termination soeuer, including the signification of the Female, are Feminines. To which shall be added those that end in *a*, *d*, *z*, as *Ca-béga*, *lealdád*, *páz*.

These following, notwithstanding they end, as I haue said, are Feminines.

From *a*, is excepted, *Día*, *planéta*, &c.

From *d*; *Atáud*, and *láud*, which is sometimes Feminine.

From *z*; *Agráz*, *almiréz*, *arróz*, *albornóz*, *arcabúz*.

The third Rule.

Nounes neuters either end in *e* or *o*; as *Caliente*, *buéno*. But to know the difference betwixt the Masculines, and Neuters, being both of one termination, it behoueth to note that the Masculine is taken for particular things, as *el mónte*, *el cámpo*; and the Neuter for things generall drawne from their subiect, as *lo valiente*, *lo negro*, *lo blanco*, &c. which as they be Neuters, haue not the plurall number.

Note that all Substantiues ending in *or*, doe make the feminine by adding *a*, as *Amadór*, *Amadóra*, *Dançadór*, *Dançadóra*.

Most Substantiues ending in *o*, make their feminine by changing *o* into *a*; as, *Hermáno*, *Hermána*; *Suégro*, *Suégra*: but this rule holdeth not alwayes.

Adiectiues ending in *e*, *l*, or *z*, are of the common of two gender, as *Hómbre* *innocénte*, *mugér* *impudente*, *cámpo* *fértil*, *cósa* *fácil*, *pérro* *rapáz*, *hembra* *sagáz*.

Adiectiues

Adiectives in *o*, make their feminine by changing *o* into *a*, as *bueno*, *bueno*; *malo*, *mala*.

Of the terminations of the plurall number.

Being sufficiently knowne what is a number in Grammar, it shall suffice to shew the termination of Nounes in the plurall: for the singular will easily be knowne by the discourse, or by some article adioyned, ending for the most part in vowels, and others in certaine consonants which shall be seene here following.

It is fit then to know that all Spanish Nounes ending with a vowel in the singular, doe forme their plurall, by adding thereunto an *s*, as *hombre*, *hombres*, *canallo*, *canallos*, &c.

But those that end with consonants in the singular, take *es* to the plurall, whereto are added such as doe end in *y*: and to make them appeare more evident, I will here set downe the finall consonants, which be these, *d*, *l*, *n*, *r*, *s*, *x*, *y*, and *z*, of all which shall be giuen examples. And first of those ending in *d*.

Sing.	Plur.
<i>Verdad</i> ,	<i>Verdades</i> .
<i>merced</i> ,	<i>mercedes</i> .
<i>lid</i> ,	<i>lides</i> .
<i>virtud</i> ,	<i>virtudes</i> .

Secondly in l.

Sing.	Plur.
<i>animal</i> ,	<i>animales</i> ,
<i>batel</i> ,	<i>batelles</i> ,

badil,

badil,

caracol,

azul,

badiles,

caracoles,

azules.

In n.

Sing. **Plur.**

<i>Pán</i> ,	<i>Pánes</i> .
<i>almazén</i> ,	<i>almazenes</i> .
<i>celemín</i> ,	<i>celemínes</i> .
<i>blasón</i> ,	<i>blasones</i> .
<i>atún</i> ,	<i>atunes</i> .

In r.

Sing. **Plur.**

<i>Pesar</i> ,	<i>Pesares</i> .
<i>mugér</i> ,	<i>mugéres</i> .
<i>mártir</i> ,	<i>mártires</i> .
<i>dolor</i> ,	<i>dolores</i> .

In s.

Sing. **Plur.**

<i>Diós</i> ,	<i>Diós</i> <i>es</i> .
<i>feligrés</i> ,	<i>feligréss</i> .
<i>mies</i> ,	<i>mísses</i> .
<i>més</i> ,	<i>mésses</i> .
<i>montañés</i> ,	<i>montañéss</i> .

In x.

Those that end in *x* doe sometimes change the said *x* in their plurall, taking *g* in the place thereof, as

Sing.

Sing.	Plur.
Carcáx, relóx,	Carcáges. relóges.

In y.

Sing.	Plur.
Buéj, Réy,	Buéyes. Réyes.

In z.

Sing.	Plur.
Páz,	Pázes.
juéz,	juézes.
perdíz,	perdízes.
bóz,	bózes.
crúz,	crúzes.

To conclude, it is evident that all plurals haue s, and that there are found but very few singulars which haue it.

Concerning the declination of Nounes Substantives, as well proper as common.

Although it be sufficient for the declining of Nounes, to know how to decline the Articles, for that the Nounes themselues doe not vary their cases, but only the said Article, as is said before: notwithstanding it will not be ill to set downe some examples of the diuers natures of Nounes, as well proper as common, Substantives as Adiectiues, and

17

A Grammar Spanish and English.

of those that seeme to be Neuters; to which the Article *lo* is ioyned. It is furthermore requisite to note that Nounes proper haue not the Article in the Nominatiue case; and it also seemeth that they are not serued thereof in the rest, but of certaine Particles, which seeme to be and are indeed Prepositions; as in the Genitiue *de*, in the Datiue *a*, and sometimes *a* in the Accusatiue: in the Vocatiue they haue the Aduerbe *o*, and in the Ablatiue *de*, as in the Genitiue.

Example of Nounes Proper.

Nom. Pédro.	Catalina.
Gen. de Pédro.	de Catalina.
Dat. à Pédro.	à Catalina.
Accus. Pédro, or à Pédro.	Catalina or à Catalina.
Vocat. ò Pédro.	ò Catalina.
Ablat. de Pédro.	de Catalina.

Example of Nounes Common.

Singular.	Plurall.
Nom. El Pádre,	Los Pádres.
Gen. del Pádre,	de los Pádres.
Dat. al Pádre,	à los Pádres.
Accus. el Pádre, or al Pádre,	los Pádres, or à los Pá-
Vocat. o Pádre,	o Pádres. (dres-
Ablat. del Pádre,	de los Pádres.

Singular.	Plurall.
Nom. El Animál,	Los animáles.
Gen. del animál,	de los animáles.

C

Dat.

Dat. *al animal*,Accus. *el animal*, or *al*
animal,Vocat. *o animal*,
Ablat. *del animal*,

Singular.

Nom. *El Pán*,Gen. *del pan*,Dat. *al pan*,Accus. *el pan*,Ablat. *del pan*,

Singular.

Nom. *El pesár*,Gen. *del pesár*,Dat. *al pesár*,Accus. *el pesár*,Ablat. *del pesár*,

Singular.

Nom. *El relóx*,Gen. *del relóx*,Dat. *al relóx*,Accus. *el relóx*,Ablat. *del relóx*,

Singular.

Nom. *La mugér*,Gen. *de la mugér*,Dat. *à la mugér*,Accus. *la mugér*, or *à la*
mugér,Vocat. *o mugér*,Ablat. *de la mugér*.à *los animáles*.*los animáles*, or à *los*
animáles.*o animáles*.
de los animáles.

Plurall.

Los Pánes.*de los pánes*.à *los pánes*.*los pánes*.*de los pánes*.

Plurall.

Los pesáres.*de los pesáres*.à *los pesáres*.*los pesáres*.*de los pesáres*.

Plurall.

Los relóges.*de los relóges*.à *los relóges*.*los relóges*.*de los relóges*.

Plurall.

Las mugéres.*de las mugéres*.à *las mugéres*.*las mugéres*, or à *las*
mugéres.*o mugéres*.*de las mugéres*.

Of

Of Nounes Adiectiues, and their declining.

Nounes Adiectiues haue two terminations, the one in *o*, or Masculine, which is changed into *a*, or Feminine, the other in *e*, which is common to both Genders. I haue formerly said that some Nounes Adiectiues are changed into Substantiues, and then they be Neuters admitting the article *lo*, and there are two terminations thereof as I haue shewed before; that is in *o* and in *e*, as *lo buéno*, *lo málo*, *lo gránde*. Marke how they are declined, and first the Masculine.

Singular.

Nom. *El buéno*,
Gen. *del buéno*,
Dat. *al buéno*,
Accus. *el buéno*,
Vocat. *o buéno*,
Ablat. *del buéno*,

Plurall.

los buénos.
de los buénos.
à los buénos.
los buénos.
o buénos.
de los buénos.

The Feminine.

Singular.

Nom. *La buéna*,
Gen. *de la buéna*,
Dat. *à la buéna*,
Accus. *la buéna*,
Vocat. *o buéna*,
Ablat. *de la buéna*,

Plurall.

Las buénas.
de las buénas.
à las buénas.
las buénas.
o buénas.
de las buénas.

Example of the Common.

Singular.

Nom. *El gránde*,
Gen. *del gránde*,

Plurall.

Los grándes.
de los grándes.

Dat.

Dat.	al grande,	à los grandes.
Accus.	el grande,	los grandes.
Vocat.	o grande,	o grandes.
Ablat.	del grande,	de los grandes.

The Neuters are declined in this manner,
with the article *lo*.

Singular.

Nom.	<i>Lo grande.</i>	<i>Lo bueno.</i>
Gen.	<i>de lo grande.</i>	<i>de lo bueno.</i>
Dat.	<i>à lo grande.</i>	<i>à lo bueno.</i>
Accus.	<i>lo grande.</i>	<i>lo bueno.</i>
Vocat.	<i>o grande.</i>	<i>o bueno.</i>
Ablat.	<i>de lo grande.</i>	<i>de lo bueno.</i>

And so of the rest without the plurall.

Note that this word *grande*, put before a Substantiue beginnining with a consonant, loseth the last syllable. Example, *grán mugér*, *grán tiempó*; but before a vowel it remaineth entire, as *grande ánimo*, *grande hómbre*, although the *e* be in some sort drowned before the said vowel, and this abreuiation is onely made in the singular number.

Also that word *bueno*, when it is placed immediatly before his Substantiue, doth cut off his finall vowel. Example, *el buen hómbre*, but being put after it doth retaine it, as *el hómbre bueno*: *Málo* followeth the same rule, for they say, *Mál hómbre*, and *hómbre málo*. I said immediatly, for some word being interposed, the vowel remaineth in force.

Tánto and *quánto* are likewise bereft of their last syllable, when they are put before the Adiectiue or Aduerbe, and sometimes before the Substantiue: as *Tan grande*, *tan bueno*, *tan tárde*, *tan solamente*; *Tan púta*

púta viéja éra tu madre *cómo yo*: *Quán mal parece* *dý essa colór de esperáncā*. *Quan bien lo háze U.M.* but being found before these two Aduerbs of comparison *Más* and *Ménos*, they are spoken at large, as *Quanto mas tanto ménos*, and in case also they precede the comparatiue Nounes *mayor* and *menor*. Example, *Quáto mayor es la fortuna, tanto ménos es segúra*.

It is requisite in construction to put the article with the Adiectiue, when it is ioyned with his Substantiue, as *El buen hómbre*, *la hermosa mugér*; but Pronounes haue not the same priuiledge: for if the speech doe begin therewith, they shall not haue an article as in Italian. Example, *Vuestra hermosura es tal, que atrae a vuestro amor a quántos la miran*.

The Italian would say *La vostro bellezza è tale, che atrae al vostro amore quanti la riguardano*, where still the Article is ioyned to the Pronoune: In English we use it not there, for we say, Your beauty is such that it attracteth vnto your loue all those that doe behold it.

As touching the Noun Adiectiue Neuter, it will alwaies require his article *lo*, for it rather seemeth to be a Substantiue then an Adiectiue, as are *Lo bueno*, *lo dulce*, *lo amargo*, *lo ageno*, *lo málo*. Notwithstanding it s excepted when it is put with the Verbe *ser*; as *bueno es amar a Diós*, It is good to loue God. *Málo es hurtar*, It is ill to steale. *Pronechoso es enseñar*, It is profitable to teach. The Article *el* may sometimes be put before the infinitiue moode in the like sense. Example, *Málo es el hurtar*, stealing is an euill thing: in which manner of speaking the infinitiue is made a Noun.

There be made Nounes Neuters possessiues of these Pronounes, *lo mío*, *lo tuyó*, *lo súyo*, *lo nuéstro*, *lo vuestro*

vnéstro: Which signifie mine, or that which is mine, thine, his, ours, yours, or that which is yours: It is to be vnderstood of goods that a man possessteth. Example, *no quíero perder lo mío*, I will not lose mine owne. *Párt a Dios de lo suyo contigo*, God make thee partaker of his, or of his graces.

Of Mucho, Poco, and Harto.

Mucho and *Poco*, although they bee Aduerbs of quantity, notwithstanding they are Nounes Neuters, as *lo mucho*, *lo Poco*; but being Adiectiues they are found in the Masculine and Feminine Gender, and change *o* into *a*, hauing the force of Aduerbs, and then they are ioyned to things without life, or that signifie weight or measure, as *mucho vino*, *mucho agua*, *mucho dinero*, *mucho azéyre*, *poco vinagre*, *poca harina*. And it may not be said, *mucho hombre*, *mucho mugér*, nor *poco hombre*, *poca mugér*, in the singular number; but in the plurall they are indifferently ioyned to all Nounes, either things with life or without life: for so much as these Nounes signifying quantity, may not be put with a thing vndiuidable, as is a thing with life, but in the plurall there is diuision made of diuers: *Harto* receiueth both the Masculine and Feminine Gender, for they say, *Harto* and *Harta* in the nature Adiectiues, signifying the same that the Aduerbe (for the true Noun is in English, full and satisfied) and hauing likewise both numbers, as *Harto vino*, *harta carne*, *hártos hombres*, *hártas mugéres*, where all foure signifie Enough.

Of Nounes Deriuatiues.

There be Nounes which in effect are Deriuatiues or Denominatiues, for that they be derived of others,

thers, and all of them end in one of these two terminations, *óso* and *éro*; *Valeróso*, *virtuóso*, *amoróso*, *marañóso*, of *valor*, *virtud*, *amor*, *marailla*, which denote the abundance of a thing, as valorous, vertuous, amorous, maruelous. They admit all the three genders, and are declined as other Nounes Adiectiues in this manner.

SINGVLAR.

	Masc.	Fem.
Nom.	<i>El valeroso</i> ,	<i>La valerosa</i> .
Gen.	<i>del valeroso</i> ,	<i>de la valerosa</i> .
Dat.	<i>al valeroso</i> ,	<i>à la valerosa</i> .
Accus.	<i>el valeroso</i> ,	<i>la valerosa</i> .
Vocat.	<i>o valeroso</i> ,	<i>o valerosa</i> .
Ablat.	<i>del valeroso</i> .	<i>de la valerosa</i> .

PLVRA LL.

	Masc.	Fem.
Nom.	<i>Los valerosos</i> ,	<i>Las valerosas</i> .
Gen.	<i>de los valerosos</i> ,	<i>de las valerosas</i> .
Dat.	<i>à los valerosos</i> ,	<i>à las valerosas</i> .
Accus.	<i>los valerosos</i> ,	<i>las valerosas</i> .
Vocat.	<i>o valerosos</i> ,	<i>o valerosas</i> .
Ablat.	<i>de los valerosos</i> .	<i>de las valerosas</i> .

Neuter.

Nom.	<i>Lo valeroso</i> .
Gen.	<i>de lo valeroso</i> .
Dat.	<i>à lo valeroso</i> .
Accus.	<i>la valeroso</i> .
Ablat.	<i>de lo valeroso</i> .

And those that end in *ero*, doe for the most part denote the office of the Noun from whence they are deriued; as,

Aguadéro de agua, a Water-bearer.

Barbero de barba, a Barber.

Carnicéro de carne, a Butcher.

Capatéro de capa, a Shoo-maker.

Espacéro de espada, a Cutler.

Hechizéro de hechizo, a Sorcerer.

Iubonéro de jubón, a Dublet maker.

Limosnéro de Limosna, an Almoner.

Mesonéro de mesón, an Inne-keeper.

Panadéro de pán, a Baker, a Pantler.

Ropacugéro de rópa vieja, a Broker.

Santéro de Santo, a Clerke of a Church.

Tauernéro de tauerna, a Vintner.

Trapéro de trápa, a Drapier.

Violéro de vihuela, a player on the Violl.

Xabonéro de xabón, a Seller or Maker of Sope.

But these doe not admit all the three Genders, for they haue not the Neuter, neither doe some forme the Feminine, & they are those which haue some occupation or office not proper to women, as *Espadero*, *aguadéro*, *carnicéro*, *capatéro*: Yet neuerthelesse one may well say *Aguadéra*, a woman Waterer, for that in *Paris*, *London*, and diuerse places there are many of them, but the worke common in Spanish.

There are other deriuatiues ending in *ido*, of them being deriued of Nounes, and others of Verbs; the former are Nounes Adiectiues: as,

Dolorido de dolor, Dolorous, or grieved.

Descolorido de color, Stained, or faded.

Desabrido desabor, Vnsauory, without taste, :

by a metaphor it signifieth, troublesome, vnpleasant.

Perdido de perder, Lost.

Venido de venir, Come.

Whereof shall be spoken more at large, when we come to treat of the Particples.

Of the termination of Nounes Diminutiues.

Nounes Diminutiues haue two common terminations, which are *illo* and *ico*; but in many bookees I haue obserued a third, which is *ito*: an Example of all.

Asnillo, a little Aise.

Cestillo, a little Basket.

Loquillo, a little Foole.

Montezillo, a little mountaine or hill.

But note that the Spaniards doe very much confound them, and without other example then the foure words aboue written, the three terminations may be seene, for they say *Asnico* so well as *Asnillo*; *Loquito* as *Loquillo*; *Montezico* as *Montezillo*: Notwithstanding it shall not be ill to say that all those of one termination, haue not continually all the rest, as for *loquillo* and *loquito*, one may not say *loquico*: *cestico* is said, but not *cestillo*, and so in like sort of others, which the studious shall be able with diligence to distinguish, being sufficient for me to haue shewed the termination of the Noun Diminutive, but howsoeuer we will not omit the Feminine, for there is also thereof; as,

Artezilla, a little Art or Science.

Partezilla, a little part or parcell.

Damilla, a little Gentle-woman.

Bouilla, a little foole or idiotelle.

The Spaniards in flattering and making much of any one vye these Diminutives in *ito* and *ico*, rather then that of *illo*, which serueth to expresse the diminution of the thing, without consideration of amitie, or a kinde manner of speaking.

Moreouer, there is another termination of Diminutives in *uelo*, with *u* vowel, as *Cuerpezuélo*, a little bodie; *boyezuélo*, a little oxe; *borrachuelo*, a little drunckard; *hijuélo*, a little childe, or a little sonne; *moquélo*, a little boy; *necezuélo*, a little foole; *pañizuelo*, a ragge, it signifieth properly a handkerchiefc. The feminines change only the finall *o* into *a*, as *hijuéla*, *moquéla*, *calabazuéla*, a little Pompion; *migajuéla*, a little crum of bread; *lagartijuéla*, a little Lizard. I haue also found *cigóniño*, which hath a different termination from all the rest, and is the diminutive of *cigüeña*. In reading peraduenture one may meet with some others, which shall be knowne by their signification, and these here set downe shall suffice for an example.

Of Nounes of number, and their terminations.

The Spanish Nounes of number haue diuers terminations, although they haue but one number, the first excepted, that is *uno*, which admitteth a plurall, and is said *unos*, hauing the signification of *algúnos*, in English, some; as *anía unos hómbres*, there was some men: *una* maketh also in the plurall *unas*, & is as much as to say *algúnas*. The rest are not found but in the singular, as is said before: and know that this Noun *uno* is of the same nature of *buéno*, in regard of the composition: for placing the said *uno* before his substantiue or adiectiue masculine, it loseth the finall vowel,

vowell, as *vn hómbre*, a man; *vn velláco*, a wicked, or slothfull person. But the feminine which maketh *una*, followeth not the same rule, for it doth not lose the *a*.

In like sort (as we haue said of *buéno*) if some word be interposed betweene *uno* and his substantiue, or that *uno* be put after, then it retaineth his vowel, as *el uno es hómbre de bién*, *déstos dos el uno es velláco*, the one is an honest man; the one of these two is a lewd fellow. And the same is also when it is of the neuter gender: example, *lo uno y lo ótro va bien*, the one and the other goes well, *id est*, all goeth well.

We will here following set downe all Nounes of number, being very necessarie to be knowne, and they are

<i>Vn, uno, una,</i>	One.
<i>dós,</i>	two.
<i>trés,</i>	thre.
<i>quátro,</i>	fourc.
<i>cinco,</i>	fiue.
<i>seys,</i>	six.
<i>siéte,</i>	seuen.
<i>ócho,</i>	eight.
<i>nuéne,</i>	nine.
<i>diez,</i>	ten.
<i>ónze,</i>	eleuen.
<i>dóze,</i>	twelue.
<i>tréze,</i>	thirteene.
<i>catorze,</i>	fourteene.
<i>quinze,</i>	fifteene.
<i>deziseis or diez y seis,</i>	sixteene.
<i>diez y siéte,</i>	seuentene.
<i>diez y ócho,</i>	eightene.

diez

díez y nueve,	nineteene.
vénte,	twenty.
vénte y uno,	twenty one.
vénte y dos, &c.	twenty two, &c.
tréynta,	thirty.
guarénta,	forty.
cincuenta,	fifty.
sesenta,	sixty.
setenta,	seuenty.
ochenta,	eighty.
nouenta,	ninety.
ciento,	an hundred.
ciento y uno, &c.	an hundred and one, &c.
ciento y diez,	an hundred and ten.
ciento y vénte, &c.	six score, &c.
dozientos,	two hundred.
trezientos,	three hundred.
quatrocientos,	four hundred.
quiniéntos,	fiue hundred.
seycientos,	six hundred.
setecientos,	seven hundred.
ochocientos,	eight hundred.
nuecientos,	nine hundred.
Mil, or un cuento,	a thousand.
dos mil,	two thousand.
tres mil,	three thousand.
cien mil,	an hundred thousand.
dozientos mil,	two hundred thousand.
quintientos mil, &c.	fiue hundred thousand, &c.
vn milion or milion,	to a million.
dos miliones, &c.	a million.
	two millions, &c.
These numbers dozientos, trezientos, and so forth,	
till a thousand, doe admit the feminine gender, when	
	they

they are put before a Noun of the said gender; as
Doziéntas mugéres, two hundred women.
Treziéntas donzéllas, three hundred damsels.

This number *ciénto*, being put before a Noun, doth altogether lose the second syllable, and is said, *cién* *hombres*, and not *ciénto* *hombres*.

One may well say thus, *vn ciénto de ducádos*, but then there is *vn* before, and *de* after the said *ciénto*, and it shall not be said immediatly, *ciénto ducádos*, but *cién ducádos*.

Beside the numbers aboue written, which are Cardinall (for so the Author calls them) there are moreover numbers Ordinall, or signifying order, to wit,

Primero, First.	Séxto,	Sixt.
Segundo, Second.	Séptimo or seteno,	Seuenth.
Tercero, Third.	Oktáuo,	Eighth.
Quarto, Fourth.	Nóno or nouéno,	Ninth.
Quinto, Fift.	Décimo or dezéno,	Tenth.

Some there be that leaue here the number Ordinall, and take the Cardinall in place thereof, as to say the eleuenth chapter, they say *Capítulo ónze*, &c. Notwithstanding there are properly found these fiue, to wit,

Onzéno,	Eleuenth.
Dozéno,	Twelfth.
Trezéno,	Thirteenth.
Catorzéno,	Fourteenth.
Quinzéno,	Fifteenth.

And after these the number Cardinall must be vsed for the Ordinall. Notwithstanding I haue read *Undécimo, duodécimo, decimotértio, decimoquárto, decimoquinto, decimosexto, decimoséptimo, decimooctáuo, decimo*

decimonóno. There are also found, veinténo, treyténo, quarenténo, cinqüenténo, sesenténo, setenténo, ochenténo, nouenténo and ciénto. And yet otherwise almost according to the Latine ; as, vigésimo, trigésimo, quadragésimo, and quarentésimo, quinquagésimo, and cincuentésimo, sexagésimo, and sesentésimo, septuagésimo, and setentésimo, octuagésimo, and ochentésimo, nongésimo, and nouentésimo, centésimo ; to which in their place are adioyned, *Primo*, *segundo*, *térçio*, *quárto*, &c. and not to the former : for they doe not say, *veynte*-*no primo*, nor *treyenténo segundo*, but *vigésimo primo*, *segundo*, &c. It is fit also to note that it may not rightly be said *vigésimo primero*, nor *vigésimo tercero*, but *primo* and *tercio*.

Of Pronounes and their Nature.

Pronounes are certaine words vsed in the place of Nounes, and serue onely to demonstrate, without nominating the person or the thing, or else repeating it hauing beene nominated before. There be diuers natures thereof, some Primitiues, others Deriuatiues, of which some are Demonstratiues, others Possessiues, Relatiues, and Reciprocals. All the which sorts being sufficiently knowne, it will not be needfull furthermore to define them ; but it shall suffice to set downe in part their pertinences, and to declare their vse.

The Primitiues (as all the rest) haue two genders, the masculine and feminine : two Numbers as Nounes, but they haue three persons, and they bee these, *yó*, *tu*, and *de si*, in the Genitiue, for it wanteth the Nominatiue. *Yó* serueth to the first person, *Tu* to the second, and *de si* to the third, being declinued as followeth.

The

The declining of the Pronoune of the first person.

SINGVLAR.

Nom.	<i>Yo,</i>	I.
Gen.	<i>de mi,</i>	of me.
Dat.	<i>à mi,</i>	to me.
Accus.	<i>me or por mi,</i>	me, or by me.
Ablat.	<i>de mi.</i>	from me.

PLVRA LL.

<i>Nos, nosótros,</i>	Wee.
<i>de nos, de nosótros,</i>	of vs.
<i>à nos, à nosótros,</i>	to vs.
<i>nos, nosótros, or por nosótros,</i>	vs, or for vs.
<i>de nos, de nosótros.</i>	of vs.

The Declining of the Pronoune of the second person.

SINGVLAR.

Nom.	<i>Tu,</i>	Thou.
Gen.	<i>de ti,</i>	of thee.
Dat.	<i>à ti,</i>	to thee.
Accus.	<i>te, or por ti,</i>	thee, or by thee.
Vocat.	<i>o tu,</i>	Ô thou.
Ablat.	<i>de ti.</i>	from thee.

PLVRA LL.

<i>Vos, vosótros,</i>	Yee, or you.
<i>de vos, de vosótros,</i>	of you.

à vos, à vosotros.	to you.
vos, vosotros, or por	you or by you.
vosotros,	
o vos, o vosotros,	o yee, or you.
de vos, de vosotros,	from you.

These two serue in the singular for both Genders, but to make them Feminines in the plurall, the *o* of the last syllable, must be changed into *a*, and say *nosotras* and *vosotras*, in stead of *nosotros* and *vosotros*.

Note that *tu* is taken for a Pronoune possessiue, being put with the Substantiue, as also *mi* and *su*, all which three are in the plurall *mis*, *tus*, *sus*, being declined by articles, and cases which make the same that *mi*, *túyo*, *suyo*, and are taken for them, but they be rather Demonstratiues then Relatiues, and they are alwaies ioyned to their Substantiues: Whereof examples shall be giuen when we speake of the Possessiues.

Although there be found in the plurall *nos* and *nosotros*, *vos* and *vosotros*, notwithstanding they may not indifferently be vsed, for *nos* is seldomie applied but by greatnessse, or dignity in the Nominatiue; as, *Nos Don Juan por la gracia de Diós Rey*, &c. And in the Accusatiue in composition after the Verbe: but *nosotros* and *vosotros* are more properly vsed in the first case; and they are alwaies vnderstood of more persons then one, which is not of *nos* and *vos*, without licence, as, *nosotros entrámos en Róma el dia de san Juan, y vosotros ya aníades salido*; We came into Rome on Saint Johns day, and ye were already gone forth. *Vos* is said in the first and other cases to one person only in stead of *tu*, which would be a terme too abieet, and theinselues would not bee well contented with *vos*, esteeming it also base, as if we should say

say *Thou* in English, so well as by abuse and affectation the Spaniards vsē almost euery where *vnéstra merced*; and in the oblique cases in composition with the Verbe, they put *os* in place of *vos*. As, *yo os digo*, I tell you, *yo yré mañana à visitáros*, I will goe to morrow to visit you: but with the Preposition it behoueth to say *vos* and not *os*; as *de vos yo digo náda*, of you I say nothing; *niéropor vos*, I die for you.

It is requisite to say how that the Spaniards often-times construe the Article of the third person, with these Pronounes, *nosotros* and *vosotros* in the plurall: as *nosotros los Christianos*; we Christians: *vos los que amáys*, you that loue: *vosotros los Philosophos de Cupido*, you Philosophers of Cupid: and likewise with the Verbe of the first or second person, as *Oy'd pués amigos (los que lo fuéredes)* el mas estráño Succió; Heare now ô friends (they that shall be so) the most strange successe, in stead of saying, you that shall be so.

The declining of the Pronoune of the third person.

This Pronoune hath not the Nominatiue case, as the two others precedent, but it followeth the Latine, and serueth to both the singular and plurall number, in this manner.

Gen.	<i>De si</i> , Of him, or her selfe.
Dat.	<i>á si</i> , To himselfe.
Accus.	<i>se</i> , & <i>por si</i> , Himselfe, and by himselfe.
Ablat.	<i>desi</i> , & <i>pára si</i> , From himselfe, and for himselfe.

We must not forget to say that the Genitiue cases of all these three Pronounes are in a manner superfluous:

à vos, à vosotros.	to you.
vos, vosotros, or por	you or by you.
vosotros,	
o vos, o vosotros,	o yee, or you.
de vos, de vosotros,	from you.

These two serue in the singular for both Genders, but to make them Feminines in the plurall, the *o* of the last syllable, must be changed into *a*, and say *nosotras* and *vosotras*, instead of *nosotros* and *vosotros*.

Note that *tu* is taken for a Pronoune possessiue, being put with the Substantiue, as also *mi* and *sū*, all which three are in the plurall *mis*, *tus*, *sus*, being declined by articles, and cases which make the same that *mis*, *túyo*, *súyo*, and are taken for them, but they be rather Demonstratiues then Relatiues, and they are alwaies ioyned to their Substantiues: Whereof examples shall be giuen when we speake of the Possessiues.

Although there be found in the plurall *nos* and *nosotros*, *vos* and *vosotros*, notwithstanding they may not indifferently be vsed, for *nos* is seldome applied but by greatnessse, or dignity in the Nominatiue; as, *Nos Don Iuán por la gracia de Diós Réy, &c.* And in the Accusatiue in composition after the Verbe: but *nosotros* and *vosotros* are more properly vsed in the first case; and they are alwaies vnderstood of more persons then one, which is not of *nos* and *vos*, without licence, as, *nosotros entrámos en Róma el dia de san Iuán, y vosotros ya ansiades salido*; We came into Rome on Saint Johns day, and ye were already gone forth. *Vos* is said in the first and other cases to one person only in stead of *tu*, which would be a terme too abieet, and theinselues would not bee well contented with *vos*, esteeming it also base, as if we should say

say *Thou* in English, so well as by abuse and affectation the Spaniards vsē almost euery where *vnéstra merced*; and in the oblique cases in composition with the Verbe, they put *os* in place of *vos*. As, *yo os digo*, I tell you, *yo yré mañana à visitáros*, I will goe to morrow to visit you: but with the Preposition it behoueth to say *vos* and not *os*; as *de vos yo digo náda*, of you I say nothing; *muéro por vos*, I die for you.

It is requisite to say how that the Spaniards oftentimes construe the Article of the third person, with these Pronounes, *nosotros* and *vosotros* in the plurall: as *nosotros los Christianos*; we Christians: *vos los que amáys*, you that loue: *vosotros los Philosophos de Cupido*, you Philosophers of Cupid: and likewise with the Verbe of the first or second person, as *Oy'd pués amigos (los que lo fuéredes) el mas estráño Sucéssò*; Heare now ô friends (they that shall be so) the most strange successe, in stead of saying, you that shall be so.

The declining of the Pronoune of the third person.

This Pronoune hath not the Nominatiue case, as the two others precedent, but it followeth the Latine, and serueth to both the singular and plurall number, in this manner.

Gen.	<i>De si</i> , Of him, or her selfe.
Dat.	<i>à si</i> , To himselfe.
Accus.	<i>se, & por si</i> , Himselfe, and by himselfe.
Ablat.	<i>de si, & para si</i> , From himselfe, and for himselfe.

We must not forget to say that the Genitiue cases of all these three Pronounes are in a manner superfluous:

perfluous: for desiring to vse them poſſeſſively, they ſhall ſay in place of the firſt, *mío*, in place of the ſecond *túyo*, and for the third ſuſyo; and they ſerue on-ly after the Verbe, ſeeming rather to be in the Abla-tiue, then in the Genitiue; as,

Quéſerá de mi? What will become of me?

Que ſe dirá de ti? What will be ſaid of thee?

El hábla de ſi: He ſpeaketh of himſelfe.

Where it appereſt that they may not be taken in the Genitiue, for one ſhall not ſay, *El libro es de mi, el cauáſſo es de ti, el ſáyo es de ſi:* but, *el libro es mío, el cauáſſo es túyo, el ſáyo es ſuſyo.* Yet neuertheleſle they may ſay interrogatiuely, *De quién es ésta óbra?* but cannot properly anſwer, *de mi*, but *mía*, without the Pronoune, and ſpeaking of ſome other they ſhall ſay, *de Pédro, de Bóſcan.*

In the comparing of *míſmo*, they ſhall be vſed in all the caſes, bee it either poſſeſſively, reciprocally, or by forme of Demonstratiue and Relatiue, for it well may be ſaid, *de mi míſmo es el libro*, the booke is my owne, *es de ti míſmo el ſáyo*, the coat is thy owne, *de ſi míſmo es*, It is his owne.

It is declined as followeth.

Sing.

Nom. *To míſmo,*
Gen. *de mi míſmo,*
Dat. *à mi míſmo,*
Accus. *mi míſmo,*
Ablat. *de mi míſmo,*

Sing.

Nom. *Tu míſmo,*
Gen. *de ti míſmo,*

Plur. 1. Person.

Nosótr̄os míſmos.
de nosótr̄os míſmos.
à nosótr̄os míſmos.
nosótr̄os míſmos.
de nosótr̄os míſmos.

Plur. 2. person.

Vosótr̄os míſmos.
de vosótr̄os míſmos.

Dat.

Dat. *à ti míſmo,*
Accus. *ti míſmo,*
Vocat. *o tu míſmo,*
Ablat. *de ti míſmo,*

Sing.

Nom. *El míſmo,*
Gen. *de ſi míſmo,*
Dat. *à ſi míſmo,*
Accus. *ſi míſmo,*
Ablat. *de ſi míſmo,*

à vosótr̄os míſmos.
vosótr̄os míſmos.
o vosótr̄os míſmos.
de vosótr̄os míſmos.

Plur. 3. person.

Ellos míſmos.
de ſi míſmos.
à ſi míſmos.
ſi míſmos.
de ſi míſmos.

I haue here ioyned the firſt caſe to the third per-ſon, althoſh *Miranda* hath omitted it in his Gram-mar. But it is to be vnderſtood that *el* being an Arti-cle, and *el* the Pronoune Relatiue, haue a diſſer-ent ſignification; the one ſignifying in English, The; and the other, He: ſo that the plurall of the former maketh *los*, and the latter *ellos*; likewiſe the ſaid *el* alone ſeparated from *míſmo*, ſhall bee declined throughout all the caſes: to wit, *El, d'el, a el, el, d'el.* *Ellos, d'ellos, a ellos, éllos, d'ellos*, as hereaſter ſhall be ſeene, and not *El, de ſi, a ſi*: for but in composition it hath not the Nominatiue caſe. To forme the femi-nine thereof it is but changing the *o* into *á*, and *míſ-ma* for *míſmo*, and in the plurall *míſmos* for *míſmos*. The Spaniards oftentimes in ſtead of *míſmo* and *míſma*, vſe theſe words, *próprio* and *própria*, as *yo* *próprio*, *tu* *próprio*, *de ſi* *próprio*, *el* *próprio*, *ella* *própria*, adioyning thereunto an *s* in the plurall.

Of the Pronoune Poſſeſſiues, deriuued of the precedent.

These Pronoune Poſſeſſiues that follow are *mío*, *túyo*, *ſuſyo*, *nuestro*, *uestro*, and their feminines, *mía*, *túya*,

túya, súya, núcstra, vuéstra; they haue also the Neuter Gender, ioyning the Article *lo* vnto them: but immediatly before the Substantive, in stead of *mío*, *túyo*, *súyo*, and of *mía*, *túya*, *súya*, we must say *mi*, *tu*, *su*, and in the plurall *mis*, *tus*, *sus*, seruing both to the Masculine and Feminine. Example, *mi* párde escriuió a tu ámo por *lo* que tóca a los negócios de su casa: my father hath written to thy master concerning the affaires of his house.

I haue obserued a difficulty to arise in the receiuing of *su*, in the singular, and *sus* in the plurall, wherein almost all that read Spanish are deceiued, for that *su* signifieth, his, her, and their, singularly, and *sus* the same plurally, hauing either of them a double signification. But to know rightly how to vse them, both the possessor and the thing possessed must be considered; for if the possessor be one only, and the possession likewise single, it shall be meet to say *su*: Example, *El* párde con *su* híjo; the father with his sonne: *La* madre con *su* híja, the mother with her daughter: and if the thing possessed be in the plurall, they shall say *sus*, as, *La* madre con *sus* híjas, the mother with her daughters. But if the possessors be many, and the thing possessed one only, it will then be behouefull to vse *su*. Example, *Los* soldádos déuen de dár obediéncia a *su* Capitán; Souldiers ought to obey their Captaine: and if both the one and the other be in the plurall number, it will be requisite to apply *sus*, as, *y*an los hómbres en compañía de *sus* mu-géres: The men went in company of their wiues.

The Spaniards put oftentimes *su*, in stead of the Article *el*, or *la*, which is a strange manner of speaking, to place the Relatiue before the Antecedent, which is it selfe expressed: as, *Ví* que no tenía *su* firma

firma del autór, for to say, I saw that it had not the Authors name, or signature.

I haue said that *mío*, *túyo*, *súyo*, *núestro*, *vuéstro*, are found in the neuter Gender when they haue the Article *lo*, mediatly or immediatly, and then they be put without Substantives, for the Substantive is supposed, and by the same reason we haue formerly said, speaking of Nounes neuters, where the Article *lo* signifieth, that which: for in saying *lo* *mío*, mine, they vnderstand that which is mine, and so of the rest.

The same shall be vnderstood although the Article *lo* be not thereto adioyned, but hauing with them a Pronoune neuter, as are *ésto*, *ésto*, of which we will speake hereafter: Yet notwithstanding we will here set downe an example of the same: that is,

No quíero perder *lo* *mío*, I will not lose mine owne.
Cúyo es *ésto*, *mío* o *túyo*? whose is this, mine or thine?
De *quien* es *ésto*? *súyo* es: whose is that? It is his.

As touching their declining, there is no difficulty at all: for they differ in nothing from that of the Nounes, being made by the Article, as followeth:

Nom.	<i>El</i> <i>mío</i> , <i>la</i> <i>mía</i> , <i>lo</i> <i>mío</i> ,	Mine.
Gen.	<i>Del</i> <i>túyo</i> , <i>de</i> <i>la</i> <i>túya</i> , <i>de</i> <i>lo</i> <i>túyo</i> ,	Of thine.
Dat.	<i>Al</i> <i>súyo</i> , <i>a</i> <i>la</i> <i>súya</i> , <i>a</i> <i>lo</i> <i>súyo</i> ,	To his, to hers.
Accus.	<i>El</i> <i>núestro</i> , <i>la</i> <i>núesta</i> , <i>lo</i> <i>núestro</i> .	Ours.
Ablat.	<i>Del</i> <i>núestro</i> , <i>de</i> <i>la</i> <i>núesta</i> , <i>de</i> <i>lo</i> <i>núestro</i> ,	From ours.

And each of them is declined by it selfe throughout the cases.

I haue formerly touched that Pronoune *cúyo*, whereof I will heere declare the signification. It now behoueth to know that it is both an Interrogatiue, and Relatiue, and hath his feminine *cúya*: in the plurall

plurall number they make *cuyos* and *cuyas*, and haue either of them severally these ensuing significations; whose, (for so it is most commonly Englished) of whom, whereof, of which: but it behoueth the learner to be carefull that he be not therein deceiued, taking the one for the other: wherefore let him diligently obserue the Spanish language, and the thing possessed, wherunto *cuyo*, *cuya*, *cuyos*, *cuyas* do accord, being contrary to the French which regardeth the possessor, as doth also sometimes the English, which shall appeare by these examples following.

First of the Interrogative.

Cuyo es éste caballo?

Cuya es ésta casa?

Cuyos son éssos guantes?

Cuyas son éssas camisas?

Where we see that all of them, being put interrogatively, are in English but only, whose.

Of the Relative.

He aquí una virgen concebirá y parirá a un hijo, cuyo nombre será Iesu.

Sigámos a nuestro Salvador y Redentor, cuya muerte tan asrentosa, fué nuestra vida.

Leámos a Cicerón, cuyos libros están llenos de sentencias.

Oygámos

Whose horse is this?

Whose house is that?

Whose gloves are those?

Whose shirts be those?

Oygámos al Apóstol, cuyas palabras son las que se siguen.

Imitemos a los Santos de Dios cuyo número es infinito.

Consideremos a los grandes Heroes, cuya fama es immortál.

Veámos los antiguos Philosophos, cuyos dichos son tan memorables.

Mirémos a los varones Ilustres, cuyas vidas escribe Plutárco.

Escuchémos con atención la Sagrada Escritura, cuyo testo nos enseña.

Meditémos la Ley de Dios Santa, cuya interpretación, &c.

Obedezcamos a la Iglesia, cuyos preceptos son cinco.

Estudiemos Gramática, cuyas partes son ocho.

Las artes y ciencias, cuyo estudio, es muy enojoso a los negligentes y perezosos.

Las matemáticas, cuya perfe-

Let vs heare the Apostle, whose words are those that follow.

Let vs imitate the Saints of God, the number whereof is infinite.

Let vs consider the great Heroes, whose renowne, or the renowne of whom is immortall.

Let vs looke on the ancient Philosophers, whose sayings are so memorabile.

Let vs behold those Illustrious persons, whose liues Plutarch writeth.

Let vs hearken with attention to the Sacred Scripture, the text whereof doth teach vs.

Let vs meditate the holy Law of God, the interpretation of which, &c.

Let vs obey the Church, the precepts whereof are five.

Let vs study Grammar, the parts of which are eight.

The Arts and Sciences, the study whereof is very troublesome to the negligent and slothfull.

The Mathematicks, the

perfición consiste en la
práctica y ejercicio.

Las naciones y tier-
ras estrangeras, cuyos
ritos y costumbres.

Las profundas y tem-
pestuosas mares, cuyas
nauigaciones son tan pe-
ligrosas.

In all which examples the Spanish is seene to cor-
respond with the thing possessed without an Article,
and the English in diuers of them to the possessor,
ioyning the Article *the* to the thing possessed, or that
is Relatiue.

I haue (in speaking of the Article *el*) made men-
tion of the Spaniards fashion of speaking, when they
apply the third person for the second, and it shall
not be amisse to say heere also that for the same reason
they use *suyo*, for *uestro*, and in stead of saying *vuestra*
merced, which would be (as I haue said) too high a
title for all sorts of people, and likewise *uestro*
would be taken in the degree of *vos*.

I will speake a word moreouer concerning the
pronunciation of *vuestra merced*, which I haue written
uestra merced, treating of the Articles: but note that
it little importeth whether it be written *uestra* or
vuestra, when it is put downe at large, although *vue-
stra* be more to the purpse; and as for pronouncing
it, I haue heard some that haue said entirely *uestra*
merced, others *vuestra*, or *vueza merced*; some againe
vuesta merced, but more briefe and more common
voasté, and for greater breuitie they many times say
nothing

perfection of which con-
sisteth in practise and ex-
ercise.

The stranger Nations
and countries, whose rites
and customes.

The profound and tem-
pestuous seas, the nauiga-
tions whereof are so dan-
gerous.

nothing but *voasté*. As for the writing of it, there
will be no difficulty, for it is set downe by two let-
ters only, which are *V. M.*

Of other Pronounes Demonstratiues.

There beyet remaining these Pronounes Demon-
stratiues *este*, *esse*, *aque'l*, which signify thus accord-
ing to the Latine, *este*, *hic* and *is*: *esse*, *ipse*: *aque'l*,
ille: in English, *este* this, or this man; *esse* that, or that
man; *aque'l* he, or he there. As for example.

este hombre, This man.

essa mugér, That woman.

aque'l mance'bo, That young man.

But I will herediscouer a difficulty, which is, that
if *aque'l* be put before his Substantiue, it shall not sig-
nifie, He, for to translate *aque'l canáll*, it will not be
good English to say, he horse, but being a Relatiue,
or some other word interposed, it may well be said,
as if I demand, *Quáles mi canáll*? *es aquél*: Which
is my horse? It is he there. *Buen canáll es aquél*:
He, or he there is a good horse.

To know rightly how to distinguish them, it is to
bevnderstood that *este* is said by a thing neere vnto
me that speake; *esse*, by that which is neare the per-
son to whom I speake or write (which is all one) and
Aqué'l is taken for somewhat that is separated, and
standeth apart both from the one and the other, as in
a third place.

Some there be that forme a kinde compounded,
which is not very much vsed of such as doe speake
well, and it is *Aquéste* and *aque'sse*, for *este* and *esse*;
and it should seeme to be the same reason of *aque'l*,
that should be formed a demonstratiue of *el*, which
I haue touched in speaking of the Pronoun *mismo*.

There

These Pronoues haue three genders, and numbers like the rest, onely they differ in their terminations, for the masculine of the two first endeth in *e*, which in the plurall is changed into *o*, and *s* thereto adioyned, as *éste*, *éss*, *éstos*, *éssos*; the third endeth in *el*, which is *aqué*, and maketh in the plurall *aquéllos*: the feminine endeth in *a*, and the neuter in *o*; their declining which heere followeth, will make it apparent.

SINGVLAR.

Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
Nom. <i>éste</i> ,	<i>ésta</i> ,	<i>ésto</i> .
Gen. <i>de éste</i> , or <i>déste</i> ,	<i>de ésta</i> , or <i>dést</i> a,	<i>de ésto</i> .
Dat. <i>à éste</i> ,	<i>à ésta</i> ,	<i>à ésto</i> .
Accus. <i>éste</i> , or <i>à éste</i> ,	<i>ésta</i> or <i>à ésta</i> ,	<i>ésto</i> .
Ablat. <i>de éste</i> , or <i>déste</i> ,	<i>de ésta</i> , or <i>dést</i> a,	<i>de ésto</i> .

PLVRALL.

Masc.	Fem.
Nom. <i>éstos</i> ,	<i>éstas</i> .
Gen. <i>de éstos</i> , or <i>déstos</i> ,	<i>de éstas</i> , or <i>déstas</i> .
Dat. <i>à éstos</i> ,	<i>à éstas</i> .
Accus. <i>éstos</i> , or <i>à éstos</i> ,	<i>éstas</i> , or <i>à éstas</i> .
Ablat. <i>de éstos</i> , or <i>déstos</i> .	<i>de éstas</i> , or <i>déstas</i> .

SINGVLAR.

Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
Nom. <i>éss</i> ,	<i>éss</i> ,	<i>éss</i> .
Gen. <i>de éss</i> , or <i>déss</i> ,	<i>de éss</i> , or <i>déss</i> ,	<i>de éss</i> .
Dat. <i>à éss</i> ,	<i>à éss</i> ,	<i>à éss</i> .
Accus. <i>éss</i> , or <i>à éss</i> ,	<i>éss</i> , or <i>à éss</i> ,	<i>éss</i> .
Ablat. <i>de éss</i> , or <i>déss</i> ,	<i>de éss</i> , or <i>déss</i> ,	<i>de éss</i> .

PLV-

PLVRALL.

	Masc.	Fem.
Nom.	<i>éssos</i> ,	<i>éssas</i> .
Gen.	<i>de éssos</i> , or <i>déssos</i> ,	<i>de éssas</i> , or <i>déssas</i> .
Dat.	<i>à éssos</i> ,	<i>à éssas</i> .
Accus.	<i>éssos</i> , <i>à éssos</i> ,	<i>éssas</i> , <i>à éssas</i> .
Ablat.	<i>de éssos</i> , or <i>déssos</i> ,	<i>de éssas</i> , or <i>déssas</i> .

SINGVLAR.

Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
Nom. <i>aqué</i> ,	<i>aquélla</i> ,	<i>aquéllo</i> .
Gen. <i>de aquél</i> ,	<i>de aquélla</i> ,	<i>de aquéllo</i> .
Dat. <i>à aquél</i> ,	<i>à aquélla</i> ,	<i>à aquéllo</i> .
Accus. <i>aqué</i> ,	<i>aquélla</i> ,	<i>aquéllo</i> .
Ablat. <i>de aquél</i> ,	<i>de aquélla</i> ,	<i>de aquéllo</i> .

PLVRALL.

Masc.	Fem.
Nom. <i>aquéllos</i> ,	<i>aquéllas</i> .
Gen. <i>de aquéllos</i> ,	<i>de aquéllas</i> .
Dat. <i>à aquéllos</i> ,	<i>à aquéllas</i> .
Accus. <i>aquéllos</i> ,	<i>aquéllas</i> .
Ablat. <i>de aquéllos</i> ,	<i>de aquéllas</i> .

It will be requisite to set downe in this place the declining of *el*, Relatiue, and Demonstratiue, as being almost of the nature of *aqué*.

SINGVLAR.

Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
Nom. <i>el</i> ,	<i>ella</i> ,	<i>ello</i> .
Gen. <i>de el</i> , or <i>del</i> ,	<i>de ella</i> , or <i>della</i> ,	<i>de ello</i> .
Dat.		

Dat.	à el,	à ella,	à éllo.
Accus.	el, or à el,	élla, or à ella,	éllo.
Ablat.	de el, or dél,	de ella or délla,	de éllo.

PLVRALL.

Masc.

Fem.

Nom.	éllos,	ellas.
Gen.	de éllos, or déllos,	de éllas, or déllas.
Dat.	à éllos,	à éllas.
Accus.	éllos, or à éllos,	ellas, or à éllas.
Ablat.	de éllos, or déllos,	de éllas, or déllas.

The neuters haue not the plurall, as is said in the Nounes, so that they are not ioyned to any Substantiues, but seeme to be Substantiues themselues ; for *ésto*, *ésto*, *aquélllo*, *éllo*, signifie this and that, which spefie nothing, but will say, this thing here, and that thing there ; such as it is, without naming the Substantiue : for it would be improperly spoken to say, *ésto hombre*, or *aquélllo canálllo*. But one may well say *ésto*, in shewing some booke which hee hath in his hand, or lying neere him, and likewise *aquélllo*, pointing to a stome or other thing somewhat farther diistant, but it shall bee alwaies without expressing the Substantiue.

The signification of *el*, not being an article, is in English Hee, in the Nominatiue ; *élla* signifieth she, *éllo* like *aquélllo*, which is as much as to say, That. Example.

*El venia por una pár-
te y ella por otra, y jun-
tándose los dos tomóla
por la mano, y se fuéreron
de*

He came one way and she another, and both meeting together, he tooke her by the hand, and they went one

de compañía. Y el deca-
mino, le ysa contando sus
infotúrios, y lo que a-
nía sufrido por su amor:
pero ella bien mostráua
à su gesto, y se echáua
de vér en su rostro, que
no se le dáua náda por
élllo.

one in the companie of the
other. He by the way decla-
red to her his misfortunes,
& what he had suffred for
her loue: but she well shewed
by her gesture, & it ap-
peared also by her counte-
nance, not to be troubled
for that, or thereat.

That word *otro* morcouver is very often annexed, and to good purpose, to these threc Pronounes, and in all the three genders, that is, *otro* for the masculine and neuter, and *otra* for the feminine. Example : *Eftótro dia vi no un hombre acá, el qual me díó nuévas de v.m.* The other day there came a man hither, who gaue, or told me newes of you. *Eftótra casa es muy linda* ; That other house there is a very neat one. *Eftótro que v.m.díze, no me parese ser muy verdadero* ; That other thing you tell me, seemeth not to me to be very true.

There are yet two Pronounes, that haue only the plurall number, which be *ámbos* and *entrámbos*, for the masculine ; *ámbas* and *entrámbas*, for the feminine, which are also ioyned with *dos*, making *ámbos à dos* ; and they signifie in English, both, or both together. In like sort is *juntos* sometimes annexed, which is also interpreted, together. Example.

*Si entrámbos que-
réys venir, yo os dare
entrámbas mis hijas,
y si no venis ámbos à
dos, no os las dare, y
por*

If yee will come both, I will
giue you both my daughters,
and if you doe not come both
together, I will not giue you
them, and therefore I speake to
you

por ésto digo que ven- you to come both together,
gáis ámbos juntos, which will be the better for
que será mejor pára both of you.
entrámbos.

Of the Pronounes Relatiues.

There be three other Pronounes Relatiues, to wit, *quién, qué, qual*, the first whereof signifieth, who, and is both Relatiue and Interrogatiue. Example, *Quién* *dize ésto?* who saith this? *No áy quién lo hága*; there is not any person that doth it. *Qué* is likewise an Interrogatiue and Relatiue, and signifieth in English, what, being put interrogatiuely, whose pronuntiation hath before beene spoken of, and therefore shall not need to be here repeated. Example: *qué es ésto?* what is that there? *De qué habla v. m?* Of what doe you speake? *Qué es lo que yo veo?* What is that which I see? As it is a Relatiue, it signifieth, which, and that; as for example: *El hombre que yo digo, es el que está á cerca de mi*; The man which I say, or meane, is he that stood neere vnto me. *Que* is sometimes taken for *qual*; as, *que hombre es aquél?* what man is he there? or, what man is that there? The third is *Qual*, which differeth but little from *que*, and is likewise englised, what, being an Interrogatiue, as the rest. Example: *qual hombre, ó qual mugér puéde padecer ésto?* what man, or what woman can suffer this? The Spaniards vse often these two particles *que tal* in place of *qual*; and so in like manner *que tan* for *quán*, and *que tanto* in stead of *quánto*. *El qual, la qual, and lo qual*, are compounded, and in English signifie in all the three genders, which, or, the which; yet the two first are many times interpreted, who, according to that

that which they haue relation to. They are declined with the article as the other Pronounes, only *quién*, and *que* want it in the nominatiue case. As for their genders, *quién* serueth to the masculine, and *que* and *qual* to all.

Their declining: and first of *quién, qué, and qual* simple.

Singular.

Nom. *Quién, que, qual.*

Gen. *de quién, de que, de qual.*

Dat. *á quién, á que, á qual.*

Accus. *quién, or á quién, que, qual, or a qual.*

Ablat. *de quién, de que, de qual.*

Plurall.

Nom. *Quienes, quáles.*

Gen. *de quienes, de quáles.*

Dat. *á quienes, á quáles.*

Accus. *quienes, or á quienes, quáles, or a quáles.*

Ablat. *de quienes, de quáles.*

Que hath not the plurall, and *quienes* signifieth in English no more then the singular. Example; *quién es aquél hombre?* who is that man there? *quienes son aquéllos?* who be those there?

The declining of *El qual, la qual, and lo qual.*

SINGULAR.

Masc.

Nom. *El qual,*
Gen. *del qual,*

Fem.

la qual,
dela qual,

Neut.

lo qual.
de lo qual.
Dat.

Dat. *al qual*, *à la qual*, *à lo qual*.
 Accus. *el qual*, or *al qual*. *la qual*, or *à la qual*. *lo qual*.
 Ablat. *del qual*. *de la qual*. *de lo qual*.

PLVRAL.

Masc.

Nō. *Los quáles*,
 Gen. *de los quáles*,
 Dat. *à los quáles*,
 Acc. *los quáles*, or *à los quáles*. *las quáles*, or *à las quáles*.
 Abl. *de los quáles*. *de las quáles*.

Fem.

Las quáles.
de las quáles.
à las quáles.
las quáles, or *à las quáles*.
de las quáles.

An example of their significations.

Allí estaba un hombre, el qual nos díxo muchas cosa, entre las quáles nos contó una história, la qual otras veces yo avia leydo, tambien nos mostró cosas maravillas pintadas en su Palacio, y allende d'esto tenia en una recámara, muchos lindos y muy ricos atauíos, todo lo qual nos causó muy grande admiración, y d'ello quedamos muy espartados, pero todo era hecho por encantamiento, y arte mágica, lo qual se vió claramente después que salimos fuera de allí, porque todo desapareció en un punto.

There was a man, who told vs many things, amongst which he recounted vnto vs a historie, the which I had other times read ; he likewise shewed vs wonderfull things pictured in his Palace, and beside this, he had in a wadrop, much faire and very rich apparell, all which caused in vs great admiration, and wee remained very much astonished therewith : but all was done by enchantment and Art Magicke, the which

which was plainly perceiued after wee went forth from thence, for all vanished in a moment.

This word *quiéra* (which without composition should be a Verbe) is very properly put in composition with *quien* and *qual*, as *quienquiéra*, whosoeuer, *qualquiéra*, what one soeuer, and in the plurall of *qual*, *qualesquiéra*, but *quienquiéra* wanteth it. There is also found (yet rarely) *quequiéra*, as in this prouerbe, *Quequiéra que digán las gentes, à ti mismo páramientes* : Whatsoeuer the people say, looke to thy selfe : or *quiquierá*, which should be compounded of *que* and *quiéra*, but in the stead thereof they vse *qualquiéra cosa*, what thing soeuer, or, any thing ; as, *qualquierá cosa que séa*, what thing soeuer it be : *yo me conténto con qualquierá cosa*, I am content with any thing. They are sometimes abridged by taking away the last *a*, and it is said *quienquier*, and *qualquier*, but I finde that this is in construction, when they goe before other words : the abbreviation is more frequently made in *qualquierá*, for that it is construed with the Substantiue.

There be also other parts of speech which are compounded with *quiéra*, whereof shall be spoken intime and place conuenient.

Of the Reciprocals *me*, *te*, *se*.

It remaineth to speake a word of these three Pronounes Reciprocals *me*, *te*, *se*, which are of the Accusatiue case, seruing sometimes to the Datiue, when they precede a Verbe that requireth it, and of which soeuer it be, they are alwayes put with the Verbe either before or after. Example: *Dime lo que quisiéres*, *y hazer te he cosa de que no gústes mucho* : Tell mee what

50 *A Grammar Spanish and English.*
what thou wilt, and I will doe a thing to thee, that shall not much content thee. *No me maltrátes así,* Doe not misuse me so. *El se va,* He goeth. *Quéxa se mucho el hombre,* The man complaineth much.

The Spaniards vse *se* in the Datiue, when they would say, him, or to him, which should seeme to be *le*, but the said *le* is not a Reciprocall, but a Relatiue, as I haue said in the chapter of the Articles, and would as well be an Accusatiue as a Datiue, as *Dile, llíma le*: and they say, *yo se lo diré, yo se lo dare,* *yo se lo embiare*; which is as much as to say, I will tell him, I will giue him, I will send to him: but it behoueth to vnderstand the thing which might be expressed, in adioyning thereto, *it*. Example.

To se lo daré muy bueno: I will giue it him very good.

To se la embiare cómo es: I will send it to him as it is.

To se lo dixe desta manéra: I told it him in this manner.

And note that the said *it*, may sometimes be Englished, *so*, hauing relation to what was before spoken: as,

Quiére decirse lo v.m? Will you tell him so?

Si, yo se lo diré: Yes, I will tell him so.

There is yet another placing of *se*, with *me, te, and lo*, and also of *me* with *te*: As for example;

No se me da nada: Nothing is giuen mee, *id est*, I care not.

Déue algo para Pásqua, y hazérse te ha córta la Quaresma: Haue a debt to pay against Easter, and Lent will seeme short to thee, *i. will be made thec short.*

No se le cuéze el pan: The bread is not sodden him:

51 *A Grammar Spanish and English.*

him: which is, He is not at his ease; or, He is in haste.

Quién éres tu que te me vénedes por discreto? Who art thou which thinkest to make me beleue that thou art a sufficient man? *Verbatim*; Who art thou that sellst me thy selfe for a discreet person?

O mi Señor, y adónde os me llévan? O my Lord, and whither doe they carry me you? for, carry you.

I might yet alleadge many other examples, but the studious shall easily obserue them in their readings: wherefore hauing (as I thinke) sufficiently spoken of the Pronounes, it behoueth to come vnto the Verbes.

Of the Verbe.

The Verbe is a part of Speech which signifieth action and passion, whereof they are called Verbes Actiues and Passiues: The Latines haue also of other kindes, but vulgar Languages know but these two only. As touching the coniugation, there is yet but the Actiue that is varied, for so much as the Passiue hath but one only forme or voice, being serued of the Verbe Substantiue *sóy*, for his variation in all the Tenses, Persons and Moods. It then requireth to speake only of the Actiue, which can neither be wholly coniugated without the aid of an Auxiliar Verbe, which is *habeo* in Latine, and in Spanish is said *hauér* in the Infinitiue Mood, seruing to the Perfect, and Pluperfect Tenses, and somewhat to the Futures, as shall be seene by the examples. It will be fitting first to coniugate the said *hauér*, because it serueth to the others; yet before we come to the variations, it shall be requisite to put downe how many Coniu-

Coniugations there be in the Spanish tongue, and to declare in like sort the Moods, the Tenses, and the Persons, which are parts appertaining to the Verbe.

There be then three sorts of Coniugations in regard of the Infinitive, the first ending in *ár*, the second in *ér*, and the third in *ir*: but in respect of the second persons present of the Indicative, there should be but two, that is, in *as*, and *es*, in the singular number: notwithstanding for the greater facilitie we will make them three; of all which it behoueth to set downe some Verbes, that their difference may be knowne.

The Moods are fие as in Latine, to wit, the Indicative, otherwise Demonstratiue: Imperatiue or commanding: Optatiue, called desideratiue or wishing: Coniunctiue or Subiunctiue: and lastly, the Infinitiue.

The Tenses are three in the first denomination, that is to say, present, past, and future: and the Tense or Time past being diuided into three, Imperfect, Perfect, and Pluperfect, they should be fие: but in vulgar Tongues there is yet a subdiuision of the Perfect, into a defined, and vndefined, otherwise determined and absolute, (which I will call the first, and second) so that they make six in the whole: Present, Imperfect, 1 Perfect, 2 Perfect, Pluperfect, and Future.

The Persons be three: the first, he that speaketh; the second, to whom they speake; and the third, of whom it is spoken.

The Numbers are, Singular and Plurall.

Yet ere we come to the Coniugations which will shew vs the Moods, Tenses, Persons, Numbers, and the signification all together, for so much as they comprehend

prehend it al; it wil be good to set down some Infinitives of all the three sorts, to shew their terminations.

The first shall be of those in *ar*, as

- Amár*, to loue.
- Buscár*, to seeke.
- Caminár*, to trauell.
- Dár*, to giue.
- Estar*, to be.
- Faxár*, to bind.
- Gastár*, to spend.
- Holgár*, to be glad.
- Inuentár*, to inuent.
- Iugár*, to play.
- Llamár*, to call.
- Lauár*, to wash.
- Matár*, to kill.
- Nadár*, to swim.
- Oluidár*, to forget.
- Peleár*, to fight.
- Quebrár*, to breake.
- Robár*, to steale.
- Sacár*, to pull out.
- Tomár*, to take.
- Vaziár*, to emptie.
- Xaropár*, to medicine.

The second in *er*, as

- Sabér*, to know.
- Tañér*, to play vpon an Instrument.
- Vér*, to see.
- Aprendér*, to learne.
- Beuér*, to drinke.
- Corrér*, to run.

Deuér, to owe.
Escogér, to chuse.
Fenesçér, to end.
Guareçér, to heale.
Hazér, to doe or make.
Impeler, to constraine.
Leér, to reade.
Llouér, to raine.
Mouér, to moue.
Nascér, to be borne.
Ofrecér, to offer.
Padecér, to suffer.
Querér, to be willing.
Raér, to shauē.

Those of the third are in *ir*, as

Abrir, to open.
Binir, to liue.
Cubrir, to couer.
Dezir, to say.
Eligir, to chuse.
Fingir, to faine.
Gemir, to mourne.
Herir, to strike.
Instruir, to instruct.
Luzir, to shine.
Medir, to measure.
Oyr, to heare.
Parir, to bring forth.
Rey়r, to laugh.
Subir, to goe vp.
Tenir, to die.
Venir, to come.
Vñir, to vnite, or ioyne.

And

And for so much as the greatest difficulty in any Language, consisteth in the knowledge and true vnderstanding of the Verbes, I will not binde my selfe to set them downe or the Tenses, directly as they are by the Author, which would cause confusion, for that diuers of them serue onely to expresse the Tenses of the French tongue; but I will be carefull to to dispose and order them, that they may be commodious and profitable for the English, whose good did most of all moue me to vndertake this Grammar.

Know therefore that the Optatiue and Subiunctiue Moode are almost alike, being onely distinguisched by certaine formes and dictions annexed vnto them: all which, or at leastwise the greater part, I will here set downe with their signification, as being necessary to be knowne before wee come to the Verbes; and first those that belong to the Optatiue: as,

óxala,

God Grant, or would to God.

Pléga à Diós que,
Quiéra à Diós que,
Pluguiéssse à Diós que,
Plagniera à Diós que,
Osi,

I pray God that.
 God grant that.
 Would to God that.
 And so likewise signifie the other two.

Those seruing to the Subiunctiue, be these.

Cómo or *Quándo*, *Si*,
Aunque, *dádoque*,
Cómo quiera que,
Puéstoso que,

When, If.
 Although, Although that.
 Howsoeuer that.
 Say that, or put case that.

Bien que,

Albeit.

This

This now sufficiently knowne, and the difference so little betweene the Optatiue and Subiunctiue, as is said, I shall not neede to separate them, but will conjugate them both together, only putting the formes of dictiones belonging to the Optatiue Moode, at the side of the Tenses, and those appertaining to the Subiunctiue, at the top, or beginning thereof, thereby the better to distinguish them: For by this meanes the Reader shall instantly perceiue, which Tense is of the Optatiue, which of the Subiunctiue, and which of both; where otherwise (as Oudin himselfe hath put them) it would in my opinion seeme somewhat difficult to the Learner. And that the studious may not be wearied with the discourses which should be necessary to repeat in euery variation, I will declare the better part of them in the coniugating of these two Verbes, *Hauér*, and *Tenér*, which shall accompany one another, for that they be Englished alike; yet their difference concerning vse, I purpose to explicate at the end of their declining, which is as followeth.

The Indicatiue Mood present Tense.

Singular.

Yo hē,
Tu hás,
Aquelha,

Téngo,
Tíenes,
Tíene,

I haue.
Thou hast.
He hath.

Plurall.

Tenémos,

We haue.

Nosótros hémos
or *hauémos*,
Vosótros héys
or *hauéys*,
Aquellos hán,

Teneys,

Ye haue.

Tíenens,

They haue.

The

The Imperfet Tense.

Singular.

Yo hauia, or auia,
Tu auías,
El hauia,

Tenia,
Tenías,
Tenia,

I had.
Thou hadst.
He had.

Plurall.

Nosótros hauiamos,
Vosótros hauíades,
éllos hauian,

Teniamos,
Teníades,
Tenían,

We had.
Ye had.
They had.

The first Perfect.

Singular.

Yo uiue or húue,
Tu uiiste, or ouiste,
El uíuo, or óuo,

Tíue, I had, or haue had.
Tíuiste, Thou hadst, or hast had.
Tíuuo, He had, or hath had.

Plurall.

Nosótros uiímos,
Vosótros uiístes,
Aquellos uiéron,

Tuiímos, Wee had, or haue had.
Tuiístes, Yee had, or haue had.
Tuiéron, They had, or haue had.

The second Perfect.

Singular.

Yo hé auido,
Tu hás auido,
El há auido,

Tenido,
Tenido,
Tenido,

I haue had.
Thou hast had.
He hath had.

Plurall.

Nosótros hémos, &
hauémos auido,
Vosótros hauéys auido,
éllos hán auido,

Tenido,
Tenido,
Tenido,
Tenido,

We haue had.
Ye haue had.
They haue had.
The

The Pluperfect.

Singular.

To hauiſſa uido,
Tu auías, uido,
Elauíſſa uido,

Tenido, I had had.
tenido, Thou hadſt had.
tenido, He had had.

Plurall.

Nosótr̄os auíamos uido, Tenido, We had had.
Vosótr̄os auíades uido, tenido, Ye had had.
Aquellos auian uido, tenido, They had had.

The Future.

Singular.

Yo auré, Terné & tendré, I shall or will haue.
Tu aurás, Ternás & tendrás, Thou shalt or wilt
Aquel aurá, Terná & tendrá, He shall or will haue.

Plurall.

Nosótr̄os a- urémos, Ternémos & ten- drémos, We shall or will haue.
Vosótr̄os a- uréys, Ternéys & ten- dréys, Ye shall or will haue.
ellos aurán, Ternán & ten- drán. They shall or will haue.

It behoueth the Readers to be carefull that they be not deceiued in the pronunciation of this Future, auré, as many are, who in reading sound it as if it were written au-ré, which is by all meanes to bee auoided, for they must ſeparate the a, or ha when it is

is put with b, from vré, where the v is a consonant, and ſay a-vré.

The Spaniards haue another Future compouned of the Present tense of the Indicatiue and the Infinitiue Mood of Verbes, as followeth :

Second Future.

Singular.

Yo h̄e, Téngo, de hauér, { I shall, will, must, or ought to haue.
Tu hás, tiénes, de hauér, { Thou, ſhalt, wilt, must, or oughtest to haue.
El há, tiéne, de hauér, { He ſhall, will, must, or ought to haue.

Plurall.

Nos. hém̄os, Tenémos, de auér, { We ſhall, will, must, or ought to haue.
Vos. auéys, tenéys, de auér, { Yee ſhall, will, must, or ought to haue.
Ellos hán, tiénen, de auér, { They ſhal, wil, must, or ought to haue.

Some peraduenture might heere ground a ſcrupule, for that I haue ſometimes put downe the b, and ſometimes omitted it; but I will answer them, that beſides the ſaid b not being a letter, I follow therein but the cuſtome of the best Spanish Authors, in whose writings it is often found to escape.

The Imperative Mood.

Singular.

Háue tu,
áya aquél,Ten tu,
Téngael,Háue thou.
Let him haue.

Plurall.

Ayámos,
Háced,
áyan,Tengámos nosótros,
Tenéd vosótros,
Téngan aquéllos,Let vs haue.
Háue ye.
Let them haue.

The Optative Mood Future Tense, and the Present of the Subiunctive.

Aunque, Dádo que.

Although, Albeit.

Singular.

Yo áya,
Tu áyas,
El áya,Ténga,
Téngas,
Téngal,I haue.
Thou hast.
He hath.

Plurall.

Nosótros ayámos,
Vosótros ayáis,
Ellos áyan,Tengámos,
Tengáys,
Téngan,We haue.
Ye haue.
They haue.

I haue obserued that this Tense and the Preterperfect are sometimes vsed as for a Future, being of the Subiunctive Moode, by putting *cómo* before them, which in such wise placed, signifieth as much as *Quándo*. Example: *Cómo yo lo ténga, yo se lo embiaré* ; When

When I shall haue it, I will send it you. This Aduerbe *luégo* serueth there also, as, *Díxome que luégo que el lo áya acabádo de leer, se lo tornerá a embiar* : Hee told mee that so soone as euer hee shall haue read it, he will returne it you. *Cómo yo áya oydo áun dos palábras, yo me téngo de j'r* : When yet I shall haue heard two words, I must be gone.

Another Present of the Subiunctive like to the Indicative.

Puesque,

Seeing that.

Singular.

To bér,
Tu báis,
Aquel bá,Téngo,
Tiénes,
Tiéne,I haue.
Thou hast.
He hath, &c.

The Imperfet of both.

Aunque, bienque,

Although, although that.

Singular.

Yo vniéssse vniéra, *Tu* vniéssse, *tuniéra*, &c. I had.
Tu vniéssses, *Tuniésses*, *él* vniéssse, *Tuniéssse*. *yo* hadst.
He had.

Plurall,

Nosótros vniéssmos, *Tuniéssmos*,
Vosótros vniéssedes, *Tuniéssedes*,
Ellos vniéssen, *Tuniéssen*.

Would to God that We had.
 they had. The

The Perfect.

Aunque Puesto que,

Albeit, Put case that.

Singular.

Tenido, I haue had.
 Tenido, Thou hast had.
 Tenido, He hath had.

Plurall.

Nosotros ayamos auido, Tenido, I haue had.
 Vosotros ayais auido, Tenido, Ye haue had.
 Ellos ayen auido, Tenido, they haue had.

There is yet found another Perfect Tense, which Ouden hath put in the Indicative: but by the reason it is neuer vsed without a Particle or Aduerbe of time before it, to wit, *Quando despuesque*, or *como*; I haue thought it more properly to be placed in the Subiunctiue. And it is as followeth.

The second Perfect.

Quando,

Yo vine auido,
 Tu viste auido,
 Aquel viuo auido,

Nos. vuiimos auido,
 Vos. vistes auido,
 Aquellos vuieron auido,

Singular.

Tenido, I haue had.
 Tenido, Thou hast had.
 Tenido, He hath had.

Plurall.

Tenido, We haue had.
 Tenido, Ye haue had.
 Tenido, They haue had.

The

The Pluperfect.

Although, Say that.

Aunque Puesto que,

Singular.

Yo vuiéra,
 Tu vuiéras,
 Aquel vuiéra,

Tuuiéra,
 Tuuiéras,
 Tuuiéra,

I had had.
 thou hadst had
 He had had.

Plurall.

Nosotros vuiéramos, Tuuiéramos,
 Vosotros vuiérades, Tuuiérades,
 Aquellos vuiéran, Tuuiéran,

Wee had had.
 Yee had had.
 They had had

I will here giue the Reader to vnderstand, that this Tense by the Author himselfe was made a Pluperfect only; but I hauing both read it, and many times heard it vsed by Spaniards themselves for an Imperfect, haue beeene so bold as to make it so likewise: for if you looke before, you shall finde *Vuiéra* and *Tuuiéra* put downe with *Vuiesse* and *Tuuiesse*, where it is to be declined throughout all the persons; and for prooef hereof, I shall need no other example then this: *Yo le acompañará si tuuiéra canálló*, I would accompany you if I had a horse; where without all doubt *Tuuiéra* is an Imperfect Tense: but if one should say, *Yo le vuiéra acompañado si tuuiéra canálló*, I would haue gone with you if I had had a horse, no man can denie but that it is put for a Pluperfect. And the same is to be vnderstood by this Tense, in all Verbes whatsoeuer: yet lest the learner should be vnmindfull thereof, I haue in euery Verbe put the first person of the said Tense with the other Imperfect, as may be seene in the sequell.

Another

Another Pluperfect, with the Auxiliar Verbe.

Singular.

Yo vuiéss*e*, & vuiérr*a*, auido, *Tenido*. In English
Tu vuiéss*e*s, & vuiérr*a*, auido, *Tenido*. as in the for-
El vuiéss*e* & vuiérr*a*, auido, *Tenido*. mer Pluper-
 feet, and with
 the same signes. Notwithstanding there may be ad-
 ded, I would or should haue had, &c.

Plurall.

Nosótros vuiéss*emos* & vuiérr*amos*, auido, *Tenido*.
Vosótros vuiéss*edes* & vuiérr*ades*, auido, *Tenido*.
Ellos vuiéss*en* & vuiérr*an*, auido, *Tenido*.

There is yet another kind of variation which can-
 not be applied to any certaine Tense, but is vsed in
 the Optatiue, with *De buena gána*, which signifieth
 willingly : and in the Subiunctiue, hauing a prece-
 dent Verbe, with the particle *si*, or in asking a que-
 stion, and also hauing the Aduerbe *quándo* before it.
 But let vs set downe the forme, and after we will giue
 examples hereof.

The uncertaine Tense.

Singular.

<i>Yo</i> hauria,	<i>Tenía</i> & tendria,	I should or would haue.
<i>Tu</i> haurias,	<i>Tenías</i> & tendrias,	Thou shouldst or wouldst haue.
<i>Aquelhauria,</i>	<i>Tenía</i> & tendria,	He should or would haue.

Plurall.

Plurall.

<i>Nosótros</i> a- uriámos,	<i>Teníamos</i> & ten- dríamos,	Wee should or would haue.
<i>Vosótros</i> a- uriádes,	<i>Teníades</i> & ten- dríades,	Yee should or would haue.
<i>Aquellos</i> a- urián,	<i>Teníaz</i> & ten- dríaz,	They should or would haue.

The example of the Optatiue. *O quan de gána*
ternia yo ésto : O how willingly would I haue that.

Of the Subiunctiue. *Preguntóme si terníaz lugár*
mañána de velle : He asked me if I should haue lea-
 sure to see him to morrow. *Vine acá por saber quándo*
v.m.tendría dinéro pára los Soldados: I came hither to
 know when you should haue mony for the Souldiers.

The Future of the Subiunctiue.

Quándo, Si,

When, If.

Singular.

<i>Yo</i> vuiére,	<i>Tu</i> vuiére,	I shall haue, I haue.
<i>Tu</i> vuiéres,	<i>Tu</i> vuiéres,	Thou shalt haue, thou hast.
<i>El</i> vuiére,	<i>Tu</i> vuiére,	He shall haue, He hath.

Plurall.

<i>Nosótros</i> vui- éremos,	<i>Tu</i> vuiéremos,	Wee shall haue, We haue.
<i>Vosótros</i> vui- éredes,	<i>Tu</i> vuiéredes,	Yee shall haue, Yee haue.
<i>Aquellos</i> vui- éren.	<i>Tu</i> vuiéren,	They shall haue, They haue.

After the Future.

Quando, Despues que, Si.

When, After that, If.

Singular.

Yo vniere auido,

Tenido, I shall haue had, I
haue had.

Tu vnieres auido,

Tenido, Theu shalt haue had,
Thou hast had.

El vniere auido,

Tenido, He shall haue had, He
hath had.

Plurall.

Nosotros vniere-
mos auido,Tenido, Wee shall haue had,
Wee haue had.Vosotros vniere-
des auido,Tenido, Yee shall haue had,
Yee haue had.Aquellos vnieren
auido,Tenido, They shall haue had,
They haue had.

Note that both these Tenses are as well vsed in the Present, as in the Future, which may appeare by the English: yet to make it more evident, I will giue an example of them both. *Yo se lo dare quando lo vniere*, I will giue it you when I haue it, or when I shall haue it. *Yo lo haré despues que lo vniere visto*; I will doe it after I haue scene him, or after I shall haue scene him.

The Infinitive Mood.

Present. Auér or haúer,

Tenér, To haue.

Perfect. Auér auido,

Tenido, To haue had.

Future. Estár por auér, estár por tenér,

To be to haue

Haúer de tenér, sér por auér, To ought to
haue.

Gerund. Auéndo, Teniendo,

Hauing.

It

It now remaineth to declare the difference betweene these two Verbes, as touching their vse and application. Know therefore that the first, which is *Haúer*, serueth alwayes for an Auxiliar Verbe to coniugate the rest, as hath already beeene seene in his owne variation. The other, which is *Tenér*, signifieth to haue something in power and possession; and it is Englished *to hold* throughout all his coniugation: but by reason that his principall signification is *to haue*, I haue put downe that only, remitting the other to the study and judgement of the Students. Sometimes *Tengo* is vsed in stead of the Auxiliar, as, *Yo tengo dicho arriba*, I haue aboue said, for *Yo he dicho arriba*.

Sér and Estár.

These two Verbes *Sér* and *Estár* shall be coniugated both in one, for that they be alike in signification, although different in declining, and a little in vse, as shall be said at the end.

Indicative Mood present.

Singular.

Yo són,	estoy,	I am,
Tu éres,	estás,	Thou art,
Aquel es,	está,	He is.

Plurall.

Nosotros sómos,	estamos,	We are.
Vosotros sóys,	estáys,	Ye are.
Aquellos són,	están,	They are.

The

The Imperfet.

Singular.

Yo éra,	estáua,	I was.
Tu éras,	estáuas,	Thou wert.
Aquel éra,	estáua,	He was.

Plurall.

Nos. éramos,	estáuamos,	We were.
Vos. érades,	estáuades,	Ye were.
Aquellos éran,	estáuan,	They were.

The first Perfect.

Singular.

Yo fui,	estuui, I was, or haue beene.
Tu fuiste,	estuiste, Thou wert, or hast beene.
El fué,	estuuo, He was, or hath beene.

Plurall.

Nos. fuimos, estuuimos, We were, or haue beene.
Vos. fuistes, estuistes, Ye were, or haue beene.
Ellos fuéron, estuuiéron, They were, or haue beene.

The second Perfect.

Singular.

Yo he sido,	estádo, I haue beene.
Tu has sido,	estádo, Thou hast beene.
El ha sido,	estádo, He hath beene.

Plurall.

Nos. hémos & hanémos sido, estádo, We haue beene.
Vos. hanéys sido, estádo, Ye haue beene.
Ellos han sido, estádo, They haue been.

The

The Pluperfet.

Singular.

Yo ania sido,	estádo, I had beene.
Tu anias sido,	estádo, Thou hadst beene.
Aquel ania sido,	estádo, He had beene.

Plurall.

Nos. aniamos sido,	estádo, We had beene.
Vos. aniaides sido,	estádo, Ye had beene.
Ellos anian sido,	estádo, They had beene.

The Future.

Singular.

Yo seré,	estare, I shall, or will be.
Tu serás,	estarás, Thou shalt, or wilt be.
Aquel será,	estará, He shall, or will be.

Plurall.

Nos. serémos,	estarémos, We shall, or will be.
Vos. seréys,	estaréys, Ye shall, or will be.
Ellos serán,	estarán, They shall, or will be.

The second Future.

Singular.

Yo he & tengo de ser,	de estar, I Shall, will, must, or ought to be, &c.
-----------------------	--

Tu has & tienes de ser,	de estar,
Aquel ha & tiene de ser,	de estar,

F 3

Plurall.

Quando,

The second Perfect.

When.

Singular.

Yo <i>úne</i> <i>sido</i> ,	<i>Estádo</i> ,	I haue beene.
<i>Tu</i> <i>uñiste</i> <i>sido</i> ,	<i>Estádo</i> ,	Thou haft beene.
<i>El</i> <i>úno</i> <i>sido</i> ,	<i>Estádo</i> ,	He hath beene.

Plurall.

<i>Uimossido</i> ,	<i>Estádo</i> ,	We haue beene.
<i>Vuistosido</i> ,	<i>Estádo</i> ,	Ye haue beene.
<i>Vuieronido</i> ,	<i>Estádo</i> ,	They haue beene.

The Pluperfect.

Aunque, Puesto que,

Although, Say that.

Singular.

<i>Tofuéra</i> ,	<i>I</i> had bin.
<i>Tufuéras</i> ,	<i>Thou</i> hadst bin.
<i>Elfuéra</i> ,	<i>He</i> had bin.

Plurall.

<i>Nosotros fuéramos</i> ,	<i>Estuñíramos</i> ,	We had bin.
<i>Vosotros fuérades</i> ,	<i>Estuñírades</i> ,	Ye had bin.
<i>Aquellos fuérán</i> ,	<i>Estuñíran</i> ,	They had bin.

Likewise with the auxiliar, Englished both like this, and as followeth.

Singular.

<i>Tovuiésseruñi- érasido</i> ,	<i>Estádo</i> ,	I would, or should haue beene.
-------------------------------------	-----------------	-----------------------------------

Tz.

*Tuvuiésseruñi-
érasido*, Thou woulst, or
shouldst haue beene.
*Elvuiésseruñi-
érasido*, He would, or should
haue beene.

Plurall.

<i>Vuiéssemos</i> & <i>vuiérra- mos</i> <i>sido</i> ,	<i>Estádo</i> ,	Wee would, or should haue bin.
<i>Vuiéssedes</i> & <i>vuiéra- des</i> <i>sido</i> ,	<i>Estádo</i> ,	Ye would, or should haue beene.
<i>Vuiéssen</i> & <i>vuiéran</i> <i>sido</i> ,	<i>Estádo</i> ,	They would, or should haue bin.

The uncertaine Tense.

Singular.

<i>Yosería</i> ,	<i>Estaría</i> ,	I should or would be.
<i>Tuserías</i> ,	<i>Estarias</i> ,	Thou shouldst or wouldst be.
<i>Aquelsería</i> ,	<i>Estaría</i> ,	He should or would be.

Plurall.

<i>Nosotros seríamos</i> ,	<i>Estariamos</i> ,	We should or would be.
<i>Vosotros seríades</i> ,	<i>Estariades</i> ,	Ye should or would be.
<i>Aquellos serían</i> ,	<i>Estarián</i> ,	They should or would be.

The Future of the Subiunctive.

Quando, Si,

When, If.

Singular.

<i>Tofuère</i> ,	<i>Estuñière</i> ,	I shall be, I am.
<i>Tufuères</i> ,	<i>Estuñières</i> ,	Thou shalt be, thou art
<i>Elfuère</i> ,	<i>Estuñière</i> ,	He shall be, he is.

Plurall.

Plurall.

Nos. fuéremos, Estuértemos, We shall be, we are.
Vos. fuéredes, Estuérdes, Ye shall be, ye are.
Ellos fuéren, Estuérren, They shall be, they are.

After the Future.

Quando, Despues que, Si, When, After that, If.

Singular.

Tu vniére sído, *Estádo,* I shall haue beene, I haue beene.
Tu vniéres sído, *Estálo,* Thou shalt haue beene, thou hast beene.
El vniére sído, *Estálo,* He shall haue beene, he hath beene.

Plurall.

Nos. Vniéremos sído, Estádo, We shall haue beene, we haue beene.
Vos. vniéredes sído, Estádo, Ye shall haue beene, ye haue beene.
Ellos vniéren sído, Estádo, They shall haue beene, they haue beene.

Infinitive.

Present. *Sér, estár, To be.*
 Perfect. *Auér sído, estádo, To haue beene.*
 Future. *Auér de sér, de estár: Estár por sér, To ought to be.*
 Gerund. *Síendo, Estánlo, Being.*

The difference betwenee *sér* and *estár* in the acceptation and use of them, consisteth in that *sér* signifieth the essence of something, denoting the quality

lity or quantity ; as, *Sér bueno, sér malo, sér grande, pequeño, tuerto, ciego, &c.* But *estár* signifieth to be in some place, as, *Yo estóy en Róma, yo he estádo en París: I am in Rome, I haue beeene in Paris.*

It behoueth to note that in asking or demanding how a person doth, the Spaniards still vte the Verbe *estár*, and say, *Cómo estás, v. m?* How doe you? They likewise answer by the same, saying, *Estóy en casa, estoy malo: or without the Verbe, bueno/pátria/verna, &c.* Well to doe you seruice: and sometimes also in placing the Verbe behind: as, *bueno estoy. I am well; malo estoy. I am ill. No estoy muy indóce. I am not very well.* Where it is seene that *bueno* and *mal*, doe not in this place signifie good and bad; but rather, well and ill, Aduerbs. In conclusion, they vte *estár* in all that concerneth the Affection or Passion of the Soule, as *Ayrádo estás. He is in choler.*

Now hauing sufficiently distinguished the Moods and Tenses, with their particles adioyned, as also the persons of the numbers, and the declining of these four Verbes, *Harér, Tenér, Sér, Estár*: the first whereof serueth for an auxiliar to coniugate Verbes Actiues, and the third which is *sér*, aideth to the Passiues; It should be requisite to descend vnto the coniugations, by which all regular Verbes are to be varied: yet neuerthelesse I haue thought it convenient to speake first concerning the forming of the Tenses, as being a matter (although omitted by the Author) very materiall, and a great helpe vnto the memory.

Know therefore that from three Tenses of the Indicatiue all the rest are formed, that is, the Present, which in euery Coniugation endeth in *e*, as *áme, té, subo*; the first Perfect, which in the first Coniugation endeth in *e*, and in the other two in *i* or *y*, as *areé,*

amé, *ley*, *subí*; and the Future, which euer ends in *re*, as *amare*, *lecre*, *subiré*.

Now from the first person plurall of the Present, is formed the Imperfect, by changing *mos* into *va* in the first Coniugation, as *amámos amáua*, and in the other two by changing *émos* and *ímos* into *ia*, as *émos leyá, subímos subia*.

From the third person singular of the Present, commeth the Imperatiue, and the present of the Subiunctiue, as *Amo, Imperat. áma. Subiunct. áme; Léo, Imper. Léc, Subiunct. Léz; Súbo, Imperat. súbe, Subiunct. súba*.

From the Perfect commeth the Imperfect, and first Pluperfect of the Optatiue, and the Future of the Subiunctiue, as of *Ley*, comes *Leyésse, leyéra, leyére*; of *Subí*, *subiésse, subiéra, subiére*: But in the first coniugation *e* must be changed into *a*, as of *Amé, amásse, amára, amare*; *Hable, hablásse, hablára, habláre, &c.*

Of the Future is formed the vncertaine Tense, by changing *e* into *í*, in euery coniugation, as *Amare amirí, lecre lecerí, subiré subiría*.

This will be sufficient for the forming of the Tenses: wherefore it is now time to come vnto the coniugations, which are three as I haue formerly said: but first of that whose Infinitiue endeth in *ár*, as *amár*, which I will here put downe.

How to decline a Verbe of the first Coniugation.

Indicatiue Mood, Present Tense.

Yo ámo,
Tu ámas,
Aquel áma,
Nosotros amámos,

I loue.
Thou louest.
He loueth.
We loue.

Vosotros

Indicatiue Mood, Present Tense.

Ye loue.
They loue.

Imperfect.

Yo amáua,
Amáuas,
Amáua,
Amáuamos,
Amáuades,
Amáuan,

I did loue.
Thou didst loue.
He did loue.
We did loue.
Ye did loue.
They did loue.

First Perfect.

Yo amé,
Amáste,
Amó,
Amámos,
Amástes,
Amáron,

I loued.
Thou louedst.
He loued.
We loued.
Ye loued.
They loued.

Second Perfect.

Yo he amádo,
Has amádo,
Ha amádo,
Hémos or hauemos amádo,
Haueys amádo,
Han amádo,

I haue loued.
Thou hast loued.
He hath loued.
We haue loued.
Ye haue loued.
They haue loued.

Pluperfect.

Yo auia amádo,
Auias amádo,
Auia amádo,
Auiamos amádo,
Auiades amádo,
Auian amádo,

I had loued.
Thou hadst loued.
He had loued.
We had loued.
Ye had loued.
They had loued.

Future.

Future.

Yo amaré,
Amarás,
Amará,
Amarémos,
Amaréys,
Amaráis,

I shall or will loue.
 Thou shalt or wilt loue.
 He shall or will loue.
 We shall or will loue.
 Ye shall or will loue.
 They shall or will loue.

Second Future.

Yo he, & tengo de amar,
Has & tiénes de amar,
Ha & tiéne de amar,
Hémos & tenémos de amar,
Hauéys & tenéys de amar,
Han & tiénen de amar,

I shall, will, must, or
 ought to loue, &c.

Imperative.

Amatu,
Ame aquél,
Amémos nosotros,
Amá lvo. otros,
Amen aquéllos,

Loue thou.
 Let him loue.
 Let vs loue.
 Loue ye.
 Let them loue.

Optative Mood Future, and Present of
 the Subiunctive.

Aunque, &c.

Yo áme,
Ames,
Ame,
Amémos,
Améys,
Amen,

Although.

I loue.
 Thou louest.
 He loueth.
 We loue.
 Ye loue.
 They loue.

Otherwise

Otherwise for the Subiunctive, as in
 the Indicative.

Pués, or pués que,

Yo ámo,
Tu ámas,
El áma, &c.

Seeing, or seeing that.

I loue.
 Thou louest.
 He loueth, &c.

Imperfect.

Aunque.

Yo amásse, amára, &c.
Amásses,

Although.

I loued or did loue.
 Thou louedst or didst
 loue.

Ovala
Amásse,
Amássemos,
Amássedes,
Amássen.

He loued or did loue.
 We loued or did loue.
 Ye loued or did loue.
 They loued or did loue.

Perfect.

Aunque, &c.

Yo áya amádo,
Ayas amádo,
Aya amádo,
Ayámos amádo,
Ayáis amádo,
Ayan amádo.

Although.

I haue loued.
 Thou hast loued.
 He hath loued.
 We haue loued.
 Ye haue loued.
 They haue loued.

2. Perfect.

Quando,

Yo úne amádo,
Uiiste amádo,
Uno amádo,

When.

I haue loued.
 Thou hast loued.
 He hath loued.

Vuimos amádo,
Vuistes amádo,
Vniéron amádo,

We haue loued.
Ye haue loued.
They haue loued.

Pluperfct.

Aunque,

Yo amára,
Amáras,
Amára,
Amáramos,
Amárades,
Amáran.

Although.
I had loued.
Thou hadist loued.
He had loued.
We had loued.
Ye had loued.
They had loued.

Otherwise with the auxiliar, Englished like
this, and as followeth.

Aunque,

Although.

Yo vuiesse & vniéra amádo, I would or should haue loued.
Vuiésses & vniéras amádo, thou wouldst or shouldst haue loued.
Vuiésser a- God mado, Hee would or should haue loued.
Vuiéssemos & vniéra- to Would haue loued.
mos amádo, Wee would or should haue loued.
Vuiéssedes & vniéra- des amádo, Ye would or should haue loued.
Vuiéssen & vniéran a- mado, They would or should haue loued.

Vnertaine Tense.

To amaria,
Amarias,
Amariás,
Amariás,

I should or would loue.
Thou shouldst or wouldst loue.
He should or would loue.

Amariamos,

Amariamos,
Amariades,
Amarián,

Quando, Si,

To amáre,
Amáres,
Amáre,
Amáremos,
Amáredes,
Amáren,

When, If.

We should or would loue.
Ye should or would loue.
They should or would loue.
I shall or will loue, I loue.
Thou shalt or wilt loue, thou louest.
He shall or will loue, he loueth.
We shall or will loue, we loue.
Ye shall or will loue, ye loue.
They shall or will loue, they loue.

After the Future.

Quando, despues que, Si,

When, After that, If.

Yo vuiére amádo, I shall haue loued, I haue loued.
Vuiéres amádo, Thou shalt haue loued, thou hast loued.

Vuiére amádo, He shall haue loued, he hath loued.
Vuiéremos amádo, We shal haue loued, we haue loued
Vuiéredes amádo, Ye shall haue loued, ye haue loued.
Vuiéren amádo, They shall haue loued, they haue loued.

Infinitive.

Present.

Amár,

To loue.

Perfect.

Auér amádo,

To haue loued.

Future.

Auér de amár,

To ought to loue.

Estar por amár & ser por amár,

To be to loue.

Gerund.

Amándo,

Louing.

I haue not in this Verbe made a distinction of the numbers as in the former, neither adioyned the persons, which I purpose to omit likewise in the rest, for that they be not so generally vsed with the Verbes:

G

But

But now we are come to the second coniugation whose Infinitive ends in *ér*, as *Leér*, *Corrér*, and the like.

How to decline a Verbe of the second Coniugation.

Indicative Moode, Present Tense.

<i>To leo,</i>	I reade.
<i>Tu lees,</i>	Thou readest.
<i>El lee,</i>	He readeth.
<i>Nosotros leemos,</i>	We reade.
<i>Vosotros leeys,</i>	Ye reade.
<i>Ellos leen,</i>	They reade.

Imperfet.

<i>To leya,</i>	I did reade.
<i>Leyas,</i>	Thou didst reade.
<i>Leyá,</i>	He did reade.
<i>Leyamos,</i>	We did reade.
<i>Leyades,</i>	Ye did reade.
<i>Leyan,</i>	They did reade.

First Perfect.

<i>To ley,</i>	I read.
<i>Leyste,</i>	Thou readst.
<i>Leyó,</i>	He read.
<i>Leymos,</i>	We read.
<i>Leystes,</i>	Ye read.
<i>Leyeron,</i>	They read.

Second Perfect.

<i>To be leido,</i>	I haue read.
<i>Has leido,</i>	Thou hast read.

Ha

Haley'do,
Hémos or haue mos ley'do,
Hauéys ley'do,
Han ley'do,

Pluperfect.

To ania leido,
Anias ley'do,
Ani te'do,
Anímos ley'do,
Aníades ley'do,
Anian ley'do,

Future.

To leere,
Leerás,
Leerá,
Leeremos,
Leeréys,
Leerán,

Second Future.

To be & téngo de leér,

Has & tiénes de leér.
Ha & tiéne de leér.
Hémos & tenémos de leér.
Hauéys & tenéys de leér.
Han & tiénen de leér.

Imperative.

Lée tu,
Lée aquel,
Leámos nosóetros,

Reade thou.
Let him reade.
Let vs reade.

G 2

He hath read.
We haue read.
Ye haue read.
They haue read.

Leed

<i>Léed vosotros,</i>	Reade yee.
<i>Lean aquéllos,</i>	Let them reade.
<i>Optative Mood Future, and Present of the Subiunctive.</i>	
<i>Aunque,</i>	Although.

<i>Yo Léa,</i>	I reade.
<i>Léas,</i>	Thou readest.
<i>Léa,</i>	He readeth.
<i>Leámos,</i>	We reade.
<i>Leáys,</i>	Ye reade.
<i>Lean,</i>	They reade.

Otherwise for the Subiunctive, as in the Indicative.

<i>Pnés or Pnésque,</i>	Seeing that.
<i>To léo,</i>	I reade.
<i>Lées, &c.</i>	Thou readest.

<i>Aunque,</i>	Imperfect.
<i>Yo leyéisse, leyéra, &c.</i>	Albeit.
<i>Leyéisses,</i>	I read or did reade.
<i>Leyéisse,</i>	Thou readest or didst reade
<i>Oxalá,</i>	He read or did reade.
<i>Leyéissimos,</i>	We read or did reade.
<i>Leyéissedes,</i>	Ye read or did reade.
<i>Leyéissen,</i>	They read or did reade.

<i>Aunque, &c.</i>	Perfect.
<i>Yo dí a ley'do,</i>	Although.
<i>Ay. a ley'do,</i>	I haue read.
<i>Ay. a Ley'do,</i>	Thou hast read.
<i>Ayámos ley'do,</i>	He hath read.
<i>Ayáis ley'do,</i>	We haue read.
<i>Ayan ley'do,</i>	Ye haue read.
<i>I pray God that</i>	They haue read.

2. Imperfect.

Plañiera á Dios que

2. Imperfect.

2. Imperfect.
When.

<i>Yo úne ley'do,</i>	I haue read.
<i>Vniste ley'do,</i>	Thou hast read.
<i>Vno ley'do,</i>	He hath read.
<i>Vnímos ley'do,</i>	We haue read.
<i>Vnístes ley'do,</i>	Ye haue read.
<i>Vníeron ley'do,</i>	They haue read.

Pluperfect.

Aunque, Although.

<i>To ley'era,</i>	I had read.
<i>Leyéras,</i>	Thou hadst read.
<i>Leyéra,</i>	He had read.
<i>Leyéramos,</i>	We had read.
<i>Leyérades,</i>	Ye had read.
<i>Leyéran,</i>	They had read.

Otherwise with the auxiliar, Englished like this,
and as followeth.

Aunque, Although.

<i>Yo vniéisse & vniéra</i>	I would or should haue read.
<i>Vniéisses & vniéras</i>	Thou wouldst or shouldst haue read.
<i>Vniéisse & vniéra</i>	He would or should haue read.
<i>Vniéissimos & vnié- ramos ley'do,</i>	We would or should haue read.
<i>Vniéissedes & vniéra- des ley'do,</i>	Ye would or should haue read.
<i>Vniéissen & vniéran</i>	They would or should haue read.

Uncertaine

Uncertain Tense.

<i>To Leerit,</i>	I should or would reade.
<i>Leeris,</i>	Thou shouldest or wouldest reade.
<i>Leeria,</i>	He shouldest or wouldest reade.
<i>Leerimus,</i>	We shouldest or wouldest reade.
<i>Leerides,</i>	Ye shouldest or wouldest reade.
<i>Leerim,</i>	They shouldest or wouldest reade.

Future of the Subiunctive.

<i>Quando, Si,</i>	When, If.
<i>To Leyere,</i>	I shall or will reade, I reade.
<i>Leyeres,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt reade, Thou readest.
<i>Leyere,</i>	He shall or will reade, He readeth.
<i>Leyeremos,</i>	We shall or will reade, We reade.
<i>Leyeredes,</i>	Ye shall or will reade, Ye reade.
<i>Leyeron,</i>	They shall or will reade, They reade.

After the Future.

<i>Quando, despues que, Si,</i>	When, after that, If.
<i>To vniere leydo,</i>	I shall haue read, I haue read.
<i>Vnières leydo,</i>	Thou shalt haue read, Thou haft read.
<i>Vniere leydo,</i>	He shall haue read, He hath read.
<i>Vnieremos leydo,</i>	We shall haue read, We haue read.
<i>Vnieredes leydo,</i>	Ye shall haue read, Ye haue read.
<i>Vnieren leydo,</i>	They shall haue read, They haue read.

Infinitive.

<i>Present.</i>	<i>Leer,</i> To reade.
<i>Perfect.</i>	<i>Auer leydo,</i> To haue read.

Future.

Future. *Auér de leer,* To ought to reade.*Sér para leer, estar para leer,* To be to read.Gerund. *Leyendo.*The second coniugation now ended, the third of course is to succeed, whose infinitive endeth in *ir* or *yr*, as *Oyr, dormir, subir*, and the like.

How to decline a Verbe of the third Coniugation.

Indicative Mood, Present Tense.

<i>To oygo,</i>	I heare.
<i>Tu óyes,</i>	Thou hearest.
<i>El oye,</i>	He heareth.
<i>Nosotros oymos,</i>	We heare.
<i>Vosotros oyis,</i>	Ye heare.
<i>Aquellos oyen,</i>	They heare.

Imperfect.

<i>To oya,</i>	I did heare.
<i>Oyas,</i>	Thou didst heare.
<i>Oya,</i>	He did heare.
<i>Oyamos,</i>	We did heare.
<i>Oyades,</i>	Ye did heare.
<i>Oyan,</i>	They did heare.

First Perfect.

<i>To oy,</i>	I heard.
<i>Oyste,</i>	Thou heardst.
<i>Oyo,</i>	He heard.
<i>Oymos,</i>	We heard.
<i>Oystes,</i>	Ye heard.
<i>Oyeron,</i>	They heard.

Second Perfect.

Yo he oydo,
Has oydo,
Ha oydo,
Hemos oydo,
Hauelys oydo,
Han oydo,

I haue heard.
Thou hast heard.
He hath heard.
We haue heard.
Ye haue heard.
They haue heard.

Pluperfect.

Yo ania oydo,
Anias oydo,
Ania oydo,
Aniamos oydo,
Aniades oydo,
Aniamydo,

I had heard.
Thou hadst heard.
He had heard.
We had heard.
Ye had heard.
They had heard.

Future.

Yo oyre,
Oyrás,
Oyrá,
Oyrémos,
Oyréis,
Oyrán,

I shall or will heare.
Thou shalt or wilt heare.
He shall or will heare.
We shall or will heare.
Ye shall or will heare.
They shall or will heare.

2. Future.

I shall, will, must, or
ought to heare, &c.

Yo he & tengo de oyr,
Has & tiénes de oyr,
Ha & tiéne de oyr,
Hemos & tenemos de oyr,
Hauelys & tenéys de oyr,
Han & tiénen de oyr.

Imperative.

Imperative.

Oyete,
Oyga aquél,
Oygámos nosótros,
Oy'd vosótros,
Oygan aquéllos,

Heare thou.
Let him heare.
Let vs heare.
Heare ye.
Let them heare.

Optative Mood Future, and Present of the
Subiunctive.

Aunque, &c.

Yo oyga,
Oygas,
Oyga,
Oygámos,
Oygáis,
Oygan,

I heare.
Thou hearest.
He heareth.
We heare.
Ye heare.
They heare.

Although.

Otherwise for the Subiunctive, as in the
Indicative.

Pues que.

Yo oygo,
Oyes,
Oye, &c.

Seeing that.
I heare.
Thou hearest.
He heareth, &c.

Aunque &c.

Yo oyéssse, oyéra &c.
Oyéssses,
Oyéssse,
Oyésssemos,
Oyéssedes,
Oyéssen,

I heard or did heare.
Thou heardst or didst
heare.
He heard or did heare.
We heard or did heare.
Ye heard or did heare.
They heard or did heare.

Although.

Perfecte.

Perfect.

Aunque, &c.

To aya oy'do,
Ayas oy'do,
Ay a oy'do,
Ayámos oy'do,
Ayáis oy'do,
Ay an oy'do,
Plega a Díos que

Albeit.

I haue heard.
Thou hast heard.
He hath heard.
We haue heard.
Ye haue heard.
They haue heard.

2. Perfect.

Quando.

To hue oy'do,
Vniste oy'do,
Vno oy'do,
Vnimos oy'do,
Vnistes oy'do,
Vniéron oy'do,

When.

I haue heard.
Thou hast heard.
He hath heard.
We haue heard.
Ye haue heard.
They haue heard.

Pluperfect.

Aunque, &c.

To oy'era,
Oy'eras,
Oy'era,
Oyéramos,
Oyérades,
Oyérán,

Although.

I had heard.
Thou hadst heard.
He had heard.
We had heard.
Ye had heard.
They had heard.

Likewise

Likewise with the auxiliar, Englished like this,
and as followeth.

To vniéssse & vniéra
oy'do,

Vniésses & vniéras
oy'do,

Vniéssse & vniéra
oy'do,

Vniéssemos & vniéra-
mos oy'do,

Vniéssedes & vniéra-
des oy'do,

Vniéssen & vniéran
oy'do,

I would or should haue
heard.

Thou woldst or shouldst
haue heard.

Hee would or should
haue heard.

Wee would or should
haue heard.

Yee would or should
haue heard.

They would or should
haue heard.

Uncertaine Temp.

To oyria,
Oyrias,
Oyria,
Oyriamos,
Oyriades,
Oyrian,

I should or would heare.
Thou shouldst or wouldst heare.
He should or would heare.
We should or would heare.
Ye should or would heare.
They should or would heare.

Future of the Subiunctive.

Quando, Si,

To oyrére,
Oyéres,
Oyére,
Oyéremos,
Oyéredes,
Oyéren,

When, If.

I shall or will heare, I heare.
Thou shalt or wilt heare, Thou hearest.
He shall or will heare, He heareth.
We shall or will heare, We heare.
Ye shall or will heare, Ye heare.
They shall or will heare, They heare.

After

After the Future.

Quándo, Después que, Si,

When, After that, If.

Tu viére oy'do,

I shall haue heard, I haue heard.
Thou shalt haue heard, Thou
hast heard.

Vuiére oy'do,

Hee shall haue heard, He hath
heard.

Vuiéremos oy'do,

We shall haue heard, We haue
heard.

Vuiéredes oy'do,

Yee shall haue heard, Ye haue
heard.

Vuiéren oy'do,

They shall haue heard, They
haue heard.

Infinitive.

Present. *Oyr,*

To heare.

Perfect. *Amér oy'do,*

To haue heard.

Future. *Amér de ojr,*

To ought to heare.

Estár por ojr,

To be to heare.

Gerund. *Oyéndo,*

Hearing.

Note here a generall rule, that all such Verbes as change their formativie letter, that is, the letter of the Infinitive Mood, they doe it onely in the three persons singular, and the third plurall of the present of the Indicatiue, Imperatiue, and Subiunctiue : as for example, *Affentár* in the Infinitive, maketh in the Indicatiue *Affénto, afféntas, affénta, affentámos, affentáys, afféntan.* In the Imperatiue, *Affénta tu, affénte aquél, affentémos, affentád, affénten.* In the Pres. of the Subiunct. or Future of the Optat. *Aun-que, Oxala, yo affénte, afféntes affénte; Affentémos, affentéys, affénten.* And the same may be scene in this

this Verbe ensuing, which for to giue some notes of it shall be declinced.

The declining of the Verbe, *Holgár.*

Which hath in English diuers significations: as, to be glad, to recreate ones selfe, to be well at ease, to repose, to make Holy-day, to doe nothing, to take breath: of all which we will make vse of the first; that is, to be glad.

Indicatiue Mood, Present Tense.

To me huélgó,

I am glad.

Tu te huélgas,

Thou art glad.

El se huélgá,

He is glad.

Nosótros nos holgámos, We are glad.

Uosótros os holgáys, Ye are glad.

Ellos se huélgan, They are glad.

Note that this Verbe is often construed with *Me, tu, se, nos, os,* and sometimes without them being understood; wherefore it shall not be needfull to repeat them further in declining of the Verbe.

Imperfect.

To holgáua,

I was glad.

Holgáuas,

Thou wert glad.

Holgáua,

He was glad.

Holgáuamos,

We were glad.

Holgáuades,

Ye were glad.

Holgáuan,

They were glad.

First Perfect.

To holgué,

I was, or haue beene glad.

Holgáste,

Thou wert, or hast beene glad.

Holgó,

Holgó,
Holgámos,
Holgástes,
Holgáron,

He was, or hath beene glad.
We were, or haue beene glad.
Ye were, or haue beene glad.
They were, or haue beene glad.

Here is to be obserued that all Verbes whose Infinitives end in *gár*, as doth *Holgár*, doe forme their first Perfects, by changing *gár* into *gue*, and therefore it is written *Holgue* and not *holgé*, which were to be pronounced like *holjé* or *holxé*, where the primitive sound is lost. Likewise those Verbes that end in *cár* doe follow the same rule by changing *cár* into *qué*, as *Cercár* in the Infinitive, maketh in the first Perfect *cerqué*, and *Mercár, merqué*; *Trocár, iroqué*, &c.

Second Perfect.

To be holgado,
Has holgado, &c.

I haue beene glad.
Thou haft beene glad, &c.

Pluperfect.

To auia holgado,
Anias holgado, &c.

I had beene glad,
Thou hadst beene glad, &c.

Future.

To holgaré,
Holgarás,
Holgará,
Holgarémos,
Holgaréys,
Holgarán,

I shall or will be glad.
Thou shalt or wilt be glad.
He shall or will be glad.
We shall or will be glad.
Ye shall or will be glad.
They shall or will be glad.

Second Future.

To be de holgár, &c.
Tengo de holgár, &c.

I shall, will, must, or ought
to be glad, &c.

Imperative.

Imperative.

Huélgate tu,
Huélgue se aquél,
Holguémos nosótros,
Holgád vosótros,
Huélgen se aquéllos,

Be thou glad.
Let him be glad.
Let vs be glad.
Beye glad.
Let them be glad.

*Optative Future, and Present of the
Subiunctive.*

Aunque, &c.

To huélgue,
Huélgués,
Huélgue,
Holguémos,
Holguéys,
Huélguen,

I be glad.
Thou beest glad.
He be glad.
We be glad.
Ye be glad.
They be glad.

Note that both in this Tense and in the Imperative, *u* is likewise interposed, that it may not alter the sound of the Infinitive, which otherwise it should lose. And the like is of all Verbes in *cár*, which is turned into *qué* in the same places.

*Otherwise for the Subiunctive, as in
the Indicative.*

Pués, or pnés que,

To huélgo,
Huélgas, &c.

Seeing that.

I am glad.
Thou art glad, &c.

Imperfect.

Imperfect.

Aunque, &c.

Oxales, Plagüe
a Dios que
To holgáisse, holgára, &c.
Holgásses,
Holgáisse,
Holgássemos,
Holgássedes,
Holgássen,

Although, or Although that.

Would to God
that
Would to God
that
Would to God
that
Would to God
that
Would to God
that

I were glad
Thou were glad.
He were glad
We were glad.
Ye were glad.
They were glad.

Perfect.

Aunque, &c.

Plegá a Dios que
To áya holgádo,
Ayas holgádo,
Ayá holgádo,
Ayámos holgádo,
Ayáis holgádo,
Ayan holgádo.

Albeit, or Although.

I pray God that
I haue beene glad.
Thou hast beene glad.
He hath beene glad.
We haue beene glad.
Ye haue beene glad.
They haue beene glad.

2. Perfect.

Quando,

To úne holgádo,
Viiste holgádo, &c.

When.

I haue beene glad.
Thou hast beene glad.

Pluperfect.

Aunque,

Oxales
To holgára,
Holgáras,
Holgára,
Holgáramos,
Holgárades,
Holgaran,

Although.

Would to God
that
Would to God
that
Would to God
that
Would to God
that
Would to God
that

I had beene glad.
Thou hadst beene glad.
He had beene glad.
We had beene glad.
Ye had beene glad.
They had beene glad.

Likewise

Likewise with the auxiliar, Englished like this,
and as followeth.

To vniéssse & vniéra hol- I would or should haue
gádo,
Vniésses & vniéras hol- Thou wouldst or shouldst
gádo, &c. haue beene glad, &c.

Uncertaine tense.

To holgaría,
Holgaríus,
Holgaríz,
Holgarímos,
Holgaríades,
Holgarían,

I should or would be glad.
Thou shouldst or wouldst be glad.
He should or would be glad.
We should or would be glad.
Ye should or would be glad.
They should or would be glad.

Future of the Subiunctive.

Quando, Si,
To holgáre,
Holgáres,
Holgáre,
Holgáremos,
Holgáredes,
Holgáren,

When, If.
I shall or will be glad.
Thou shalt or wilt be glad.
He shall or will be glad.
We shall or will be glad.
Ye shall or will be glad.
They shall or will be glad. And, I
am glad, &c. As in the Present
of the Indicatiue.

After the Future.

Quando, despue's que, Si, When, After that, If.
To vniére holgádo, I shall haue beene glad, I haue
beene glad.
Vniéres holgádo, &c. Thou shalt haue beene glad,
Thou hast beene glad, &c.

H

Infinitive.

Infinitive.

Present. *Holgár*,Perfect. *Auér holgádo*,Future. *Auér de holgár*,*Estár por holgár*,Gerund. *Holgándo*,

To be glad.

To haue beene glad.

To ought to be glad.

To be to be glad.

Being glad.

Of the Verbe *Dár*, To giue.

Dár, which maketh *doy* in the first person present of the Indicatiue, doth in nothing differ from *Estár* which is before declined with the verbe *Ser*, sauing only in the first Perfect, where it formeth *Dí*, *diste*, *díó*, *Dimos*, *diste*, *dieron*; and in all the rest is coniugated as I haue said.

The declining of the verbe *Querér*, which signifieth to will, or to be willing; and To loue.

Indicatiue Mood, Present Tense.

To quieró,*Quiercs*,*Quiere*,*Querémos*,*Quereis*,*Quieren*,I wil; and I loue, &c See in *Amo*, where it is set downe at large.

Thou wilt.

He will.

We will.

Ye will.

They will.

Imperfect.

I did will or was willing.

Thou didst will or wert willing.

He did will or was willing.

We did will or were willing.

Ye did will or were willing.

They did will or were willing.

First

To queríu,*Querías*,*Quería*,*Queríamos*,*Queríades*,*Querian*,*To quise*,*Quisiste*,*Quisó*,*Quisimos*,*Quisistes*,*Quisieron*,

To be querido,

Has querido, &c,*To aní a querido*,*Aní as querido*, &c.

First Perfect.

I willed or was willing.

Thou willedst or wert willing.

He willed or was willing.

We willed or were willing.

Ye willed or were willing.

They willed or were willing.

2. Perfect.

I haue beene willing.

Thou hast beene willing, &c.

Pluperfect.

I had beene willing.

Thou hadst beene willing, &c.

Future.

To querré,*Querrás*,*Querrá*,*Querrémos*,*Querréys*,*Querrán*,

I shall or will be willing.

Thou shalt or wilt be willing.

He shall or will be willing.

We shall or will be willing.

Ye shall or will be willing.

They shall or will be willing.

2. Future.

To be & téngo de querer,

Quiér tu,*Quiéra aquél*,

I shall, will, must or ought to be willing, &c.

Imperative.

Be thou willing.

Let him be willing.

H 2

Querámos,

Querámos nosotros,
Queréd vosotros,
Quiéran aquéllos,

Let vs be willing.
 Be ye willing.
 Let them be willing.

Optative Future, and Present of the Subiunctive.

Aunque, &c.

To quiera,
Quiéras,
Quiéra,
Querámos,
Queráys,
Quiéran,

Although.
 I will.
 Thou wilt.
 He will.
 We will.
 Ye will.
 They will.

Otherwise for the Subiunctive.

Pues,

To quieró,
Tu quierés, &c.

Seeing that.

I will.
 Thou wilt, &c.

Imperfect.

Aunque,

To quisieréss, quisiera, &c.
Quisiéss,
Quisiéss,
Quisiéssimos,
Quisiéssedes,
Quisiéssen,

Although.

I were willing.
 Thou wert willing.
 He were willing.
 We were willing.
 Ye were willing.
 They were willing.

Perfect.

Perfect.

Aunque,

To áya querido,
Ayas querido,
Aya querido,
Oxala Ayámos querido,
Ayáis querido,
Ayan querido,

Although.

I haue beene willing.
 God Thou hast beene willing.
 God He hath beene willing.
 We haue beene willing.
 Ye haue beene willing.
 They haue beene willing.

2. Perfect.

Quando,

To úne querido,
Vniste querido, &c.

When.

I haue beene willing.
 Thou hast beene willing, &c.

Pluperfect.

Aunque,

To quisierá,
Quisiéras,
Quisiéra,
Oxala Quisiéramos,
Quisiérades,
Quisiéran,

Although that.

I had beene willing.
 God Thou hadst beene willing.
 He had beene willing.
 We had beene willing.
 Ye had beene willing.
 They had beene willing.

Likewise with the auxiliar, Englished like this,
 and as followeth.

To vniéss & vniéra
querido,
Vniéss & vniéras
querido, &c.

I would, or should haue
 beene willing.
 Thou wouldest, or shouldest
 haue beene willing, &c.

Uncertaine

To querria,
Querriás,

Querri,
Querriamos,
Querriádes,
Querrián,

Uncertaine Tense.

I would, I should be willing.
Thou wouldest, Thou shouldest be
willing.
He would, He should be willing.
We would, We shouldest be willing.
Ye would, Ye shouldest be willing.
They would, They shouldest be
willing.

Future of the Subiunctive.

Quando, Si,

To quisére,
Quiséres,

Quisére,

Quiséremos,

Quiséredes, & qui-
siéredes,
Quiséren,

When, If.

I shall or will be willing, I will.
Thou shalt or wilt be willing,
Thou wilt.
He shall or will be willing, Hee
will.
We shall or will be willing, We
will.
Yee shall or will be willing, Yee
will.
They shall or will be willing,
They will.

After the Future.

Quando, Después que, Si.

To vuiére querido,

Vuiéres querido, &c.

When, After that, If.

I shall haue beene willing, I
haue beene willing.

Thou shalt haue beene willing,
Thou hast beene willing, &c.

Infinitive.

Infinitive.

Present. Querér,

Perfect. Auér querido,

Future. Auér de querér,

Estár por querér,

Gerund. Queriéndo,

To be willing.

To haue beene willing.

To ought to be willing.

To be to be willing.

Willing.

The declining of the Verbe *Podér*, to may or
can, or to be able.

Indicative Mood, Present Tense.

To puédo,

Puédes,

Puéde,

Podémos,

Podéys,

Puéden,

I may or can, or I am able.

Thou maist or canst, or thou art able.

He may or can, or he is able.

We may or can, or we are able.

Ye may or can, or ye are able.

They may or can, or they are able.

Imperfect.

To podía,

Podías,

Podía,

Podíamis,

Podíades,

Podían,

I might or could, or I was able.

Thou mightist or couldst, or thou wert
able.

He might or could, or he was able.

We might or could, or we were able.

Ye might or could, or ye were able.

They might or could, or they were able.

To púdt,

Pudíste,

Púdo,

Pudímos,

Pudístes,

Pudíeron,

First Perfect.

This Tense is Englished as in the Im-
perfect.

2. Perfect.

To be podido,
Has podido,
Ha podido, &c.

I haue beene able.
 Thou hast beene able.
 He hath beene able, &c.

Pluperfect.

To auia podido,
Auias podido, &c.

I had beene able,
 Thou hadst beene able, &c.

Future.

To podre,
Podrás,
Podrá,
Podrémos,
Podréys,
Podrán,

I shall or will be able.
 Thou shalt or wilt be able.
 He shall or will be able.
 We shall or will be able.
 Ye shall or will be able.
 They shall or will be able.

This Verbe hath not the Imperatiue.

Optative Future, and Present of the Subiunctive.

Aunque,

To pueda,
Puedas,

Tuéda,

Ox. Podámos,

Podáys,

Puedan,

Although.

I may or can, or I be able.
 Thou maist or canst, or
 thou beest able.

God grant that He may or can, or hee be
 able.

Wee may or can, or we be
 able.

Yee may or can, or ye be
 able.

They may or can, or they
 beable.

Imperfeet.

Imperfeet.

Aunque,
*To pudiéssse, Pudié-
 ra, &c.*

Pudiésses,

Pudiéssse,

Ox. Pudiéssemos,

Pudiéssedes,

Pudiéssen,

Aunque,

Ox. To áya podido,
Ayas podido, &c.

Although.

I might or could, or I were
 able.

Thou mightst or couldst,
 or thou wert able.

He might or could, or he
 were able.

We might or could, or we
 were able.

Ye might or could, or ye
 were able.

They might or could, or
 they were able.

Perfect.

Although.

Ox. I pray God I haue beene able,
Thou hast beene able, &c.

Quando,
To siue podido,
Vuiste podido, &c.

2. Perfect.

When,
 I haue beene able.
 Thou hast beene able, &c.

Ox. Aunque,
To pudiéra,
Pudiéras,
Pudiéra,
Pudiéramos,
Pudiérades,
Pudiéran,

Although.

I had beene able.
 Thou hadst beene able.

He had beene able.

We had beene able.

Ye had beene able.

They had beene able.

Likewise

Likewisewith the auxiliar, Englished like this,
and as followeth.

<i>Yo vniéssē & vniéra podido,</i>	I would or should haue beene able.
<i>Vniéssē & vniéras podido, &c.</i>	Thou wouldest or shouldest haue beene able, &c.

Uncertaine Tense.

<i>Yo podría,</i>	I might or could, or I should be able.
<i>Podrías,</i>	Thou mightst or couldst, or thou shouldst be able.
<i>Podría,</i>	Hee might or could, or he should be able.
<i>Podríamos,</i>	We might or could, or we should be able.
<i>Podrías, &c.,</i>	Yee might or could, or yee should be able.
<i>Podrían,</i>	They might or could, or they should be able.

Future.

<i>Quando, Si,</i>	<i>When, If.</i>
<i>Yo pudiére,</i>	I shall or will be able, I may or can.
<i>Pudiéres,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt be able, Thou maist or canst.
<i>Pudiére,</i>	Hee shall or will be able, He may or can.
<i>Pudiéremos,</i>	We shall or will be able, We may or can.
<i>Pudiéredes,</i>	Yeshall or will be able, Ye may or can.
<i>Pudiéren,</i>	They shall or will be able, They may or can.

After

After the Future.

<i>Quando, despues que, Si,</i>	<i>When, After that, If.</i>
<i>Yo vniére podido,</i>	I shall haue beene able, I haue beene able.
<i>Vniéres podido, &c.</i>	Thou shalt haue beene able, Thou hast beene able, &c.

Infinitive.

<i>Present. Podér,</i>	<i>To may or can, or to be able.</i>
<i>Perfect. Avcé podido,</i>	<i>To haue beene able.</i>
<i>Future. Estár por podér,</i>	<i>To be to be able.</i>
<i>Gerund. Pudiendo,</i>	<i>Being able.</i>

The declining of the Verbe *Hazér*, to doe, or
make; but I will English it only, to doe.

Indicative Mood, Present Tense.

<i>Yo hágō,</i>	<i>I doe.</i>
<i>Házes,</i>	<i>Thou doest.</i>
<i>Háze,</i>	<i>He doth.</i>
<i>Hazémos,</i>	<i>We doe.</i>
<i>Hazéys,</i>	<i>Ye doe.</i>
<i>Házen,</i>	<i>They doe.</i>

Imperfect.

<i>Yo hazía,</i>	<i>I did doe.</i>
<i>Hazías,</i>	<i>Thou didst doe.</i>
<i>Hazía,</i>	<i>He did doe.</i>
<i>Hazíamos,</i>	<i>We did doe.</i>
<i>Hazíades,</i>	<i>Ye did doe.</i>
<i>Hazían,</i>	<i>They did doe.</i>

I. Perfect.

1. Perfect.

To hize,
Hosíte,
Híz,
Hezímos,
Hezítes,
Hiziéron,

To he hécho,
Has hécho,
Habécho, &c.

To auia hécho,
Anias hécho, &c.

To haré,
Harás,
Hará,
Harémos,
Haréys,
Harán,

*To he & téngo de ba-
zér, &c.*

Haz tu,
Hága aquél,
Hagámos nosótros,
Hazéd vosótros,
Hagan aquéllos,

I did.
Thou didst.
He did.
We did.
Ye did.
They did.

I haue done.
Thou haft done.
He hath done. &c.

I had done.
Thou hadst done, &c.

I shall or will doe.
Thou shalt or wilt doe.
He shall or will doe.
We shall or will doe.
Ye shall or will doe.
They shall or will doe.

I shall, will, must, or ought to
doe, &c.

Doe thou.
Let him doe.
Let vs doe.
Doe yee.
Let them doe.

2. Perfect.

Optative

Optative Future, and Present of the Subinuertine.

Aunque,

To hágá,
Háras,
Hágá,
Hagámos,
Hagáys,
Hágán,

Imperfect.

Aunque,

To hizieſſe, hiziéra, &c.
Hiziéſſes,
Hiziéſſe,
Hiziéſſimos,
Hiziéſſedes,
Hiziéſſen,

Perfect.

Aunque,

To aya hécho,
áyas hécho, &c.

Quando,

To úne hécho,
Vuiste hécho, &c.

Although.

I doe.
Thou doest.
He doeth.
We doe.
Ye doe.
They doe.

Although.

I did.
Thou diddest.
He did.
We did.
Ye did.
They did.

Although.

I haue done.
Thou haft done, &c.

2. Perfect.

When.

I have done.
Thou hast done, &c.

Pluperfect.

Pluperfect.

Aunque,

Yo hiziéra,
Hiziéras,
Hiziéra,
Hiziéramos,
Hiziérades,
Hiziérán,

Likewise with the auxiliar, Englished like this,
 and as followeth.

Yo vuiéssse & vniéra I would or should haue
hécho, &c. done, &c.

Uncertaine Tense.

Yo haría,
Hariás,

Haria,
Hariámos,
Hariádes,
Harián,

I should or would doe.
 Thou shouldst or wouldst
 doe.
 He should or would doe.
 We should or would doe.
 Ye should or would doe.
 They should or would doe.

Future of the Subjunctive.

Quando, Si,

Yo hiziére, I shall or will doe, I doe.
Hiziéres, Thou shalt or wilt doe, Thou doest.

Hiziére, Hee shall or will doe, He
 doth.
Hiziéremos, We shall or will doe, We
 doe.

Hiziéredes,

Although.

God I had done.
Thou hadst done.
He had done.
We had done.
Ye had done.
They had done.

Hiziéredes,
Hiziéren,

Ye shall or will doe, Ye doe.
 They shall or will doe, They
 doe.

After the Future.

*Quando, Si,**Yo vuiére hécho,**Vniéres hécho, &c.*

When, If.

I shall haue done, I haue
 done.

Thou shalt haue done, Thou
 hast done.

Infinitiue.

Present.	<i>Hazér,</i>	To doe.
Perfect.	<i>Auér hécho,</i>	To haue done.
Future.	<i>Estár pór hazér,</i>	To be to doe.
Gerund.	<i>Haziéndo,</i>	Doing.

The declining of the Verbe *Ponér*, to Put.

Indicatiue Mood, Present Tense.

Yo Póngo,
Pónes,
Póne,
Porémos,
Ponéys,
Pónen,

I doe put.
 Thou doest put.
 He doth put.
 We doe put.
 Ye doe put.
 They doe put.

Imperfect.

Yo ponía,
Ponías,
Ponia,
Poníamos,
Poniades,
Ponian,

I did put.
 Thou didst put.
 He did put.
 We did put.
 Ye did put.
 They did put.

I. Perfect.

To Púse,
Pusíste,
Púso,
Pusímos,
Pusístes,
Pusieron,

To he puesto,
Has puesto, &c.

To aníapuesto,
Anías puesto, &c.

To pondré & porne,
Pondrá & pornás,
Pondrá & porná,
Pondrémos & pornémos,
Pondréys & pornéys,
Pondrán & pornán,

*To he & tengo de po-
 ner, &c.*

Pon tu,
Pónga aquél,
Pongámos,
Ponéd,
Póngan,

1. *Perfect.*
 I put.
 Thou putst.
 He put.
 We put.
 Ye put.
 They put.

2. *Perfect.*
 I haue put.
 Thou hast put, &c.

Pluperfect.

I had put.
 Thou hadst put, &c.

Future.

I shall or will put.
 Thou shalt or wilt put.
 He shall or will put.
 We shall or will put.
 Ye shall or will put.
 They shall or will put.

2. *Future.*

I shall, will, must, or ought
 to put.

Imperative.

Put thou.
 Let him put.
 Let vs put.
 Put ye.
 Let them put.

Optative

*Optative Future, and Present of the
 Subiunctive.*

Aunque,

Oxala *To pónga,*
Póngas,
Pónga,
Pongámos,
Pongáys,
Póngan,

Although.

I put.
 Thou puttest.
 He putteth.
 We put.
 Ye put.
 They put.

Imperfect.

Aunque,

Oxala *To pusíesse, pusíera, &c.*
Pusiesse,
Pusíesse,
Pusíessemos,
Pusíessedes,
Pusíessen,

Although.

I did put.
 Thou didst put.
 He did put.
 We did put.
 Ye did put.
 They did put.

Perfect.

Aunque,

Oxala *To áya puesto,*
Ayas puesto, &c.

Although.

I pray God I haue put.
 Thou hast put, &c.

The second Perfect.

When.

Quando,
To úne puesto,
Vuiste puesto, &c.

I haue put.
 Thou hast put.

Pluperfect.

Pluperfect.

Aunque,

Yo pusiéra,
Pusiéras,
Pusiéra,
Oxala Pusiéramos,
Pusiérades,
Pusiérán,

I had put.
 Thou hadst put.
 He had put.
 We had put.
 Ye had put.
 They had put.

Likewise with the auxiliar, Englished like this,
 and as followeth.

*Yo vuiéssse & vuiéra
 puésto,*
*Vuiésses & vuiéras
 puésto, &c.*

I would or should haue
 put.
 Thou wouldst or shouldst
 haue put, &c.

Uncertaine Tense.

Yo pondría & pornía,
Pondriás & pornías,

I should or would put.
 Thou shouldst or wouldst
 put.

Pondría & pornía,
*Pondriamos & pornia-
 mos,*

He should or would put.
 We should or would put.

Pondriades & porniades, Ye should or would put.
Pondrian & pornian, They should or would put.

Future of the Subiunctive.

Quando, Si,

Yo pusiére,
Pusiéres,
Pusiére,
Pusiéremos,

I shall or will put, I put.
 Thou shalt or wilt put, thou puttest.
 He shall or will put, he putteth.
 We shall or will put, we put.

Pusiéredes,

When, If.

A Grammar Spanish and English. 115
Pusiéredes, Ye shall or will put, ye put.
Pusiéren, They shall or will put, they put.

After the Future.

Quando, Si,

When, If.

Yo vuiére puésto, I shall haue put, I haue put.
Vuiéres puésto, &c. Thou shalt haue put, thou hast
 put.

Infinitive.

Present.	<i>Ponér,</i>	To put.
Perfect.	<i>Auér puésto,</i>	To haue put.
Future.	<i>Estár por ponér,</i>	To be to put.
Gerund.	<i>Poniéndo,</i>	Putting.

The declining of the Verbe *Sabér*, to Know.

Indicative Mood, Present Tense.

<i>Yo sé,</i>	I know.
<i>Sá'es,</i>	Thou knowest.
<i>Sá'e,</i>	He knoweth.
<i>Sabémos,</i>	We know.
<i>Sabéys,</i>	Ye know.
<i>Sabén,</i>	They know.

Imperf.

<i>Yo sabía,</i>	I did know.
<i>Sabías,</i>	Thou didst know.
<i>Sabía,</i>	He did know.
<i>Sabíamos,</i>	We did know.
<i>Sabíades,</i>	Ye did know.
<i>Sabían,</i>	They did know.

First Perfect.

Yo sépe,
Supiste,
Súpo,
Supimos,
Supistes,
Supieron,

I knew.
Thou knewst.
He knew.
We knew.
Ye knew.
They knew.

Second Perfect.

To be sabido,
Has sabido, &c.

I haue knowne.
Thou hast knowne, &c.

Pluperfekt.

To auia sabido,
Auias sabido, &c.

I had knowne.
Thou hadst knowne, &c.

Future.

Yo sabré,
Sabráis,
Sabrá,
Sabrémos,
Sabréys,
Sabrán,

I shall or will know.
Thou shalt or wilt know.
He shall or will know.
We shall or will know.
Ye shall or will know.
They shall or will know.

2. Future.

To be & tengo de saber,
&c. I shall, will, must, or
ought to know, &c.

Imperative.

Sábe tu, sépas,
Sépa aquél,
Sepámos nosótros,
Sabéd vosótros,
Sépan aquélos,

Know thou.
Let him know.
Let vs know.
Know ye.
Let them know.

Optative

Optative Future, and Present of the Subiunctive.

Aunque,

Yo sépa,
Sépas,
Sépa,
Sepámos,
Sepáys,
Sépan,

I know.
Thou knowest.
He knoweth.
We know.
Ye know.
They know.

Imperfect.

Aunque,

Yo supiésse, supiéra, &c.
Supiésses,

I knew or did know.
Thou knewest or didst
know.
He knew or did know.
We knew or did know.
Ye knew or did know.
they knew or did know

Yo sépiésse, supiésses,
Supiéssimos,
Supiéssedes,
Supiéssen,

Perfect.

Aunque,

Yo sépiésse, supiésses,
Supiéssimos,
Supiéssedes,
Supiéssen,

I haue knowne.
Thou hast knowne.

Second Perfect.

When.

Yo sépiésse, supiésses,
Supiéssimos,
Supiéssedes,
Supiéssen,

I haue knowne.
Thou hast knowne, &c.

Pluperfect.

Pluperfect.

Aunque,

Yo supiera,
Supieras,
Supiera,
Supieramos,
Supierades,
Supieran,

Likewise with the auxiliar, Englished like this,
 and as followeth.

Yo vniesse & vniéra I would or should haue
sabido,
Vniésses & vniéras Thou wouldest or shouldst
sabido, &c.

Vnertaine Tense.

Yo sabría, I should or would know.
Sabrías, Thou shouldest or wouldest know.
Sabría, He shouldest or wouldest know.
Sabriamos, We shouldest or wouldest know.
Sabriades, Ye shouldest or wouldest know.
Sabrian, They shouldest or wouldest know.

*Future of the Subiunctive.**Quando, Si,*

Yo supiere, I shall or will know.
Supieres, Thou shalt or wilt know.
Supiére, He shall or will know.
Supiéremos, We shall or will know.
Supiéredes, Ye shall or will know.
Supiéren, They shall or will know.

Although.

God I had knowne.
Thou hadst knowne.

*Would to**Opnion**After**After the Future.**When, If.**Quando, Si,**Yo vniére sabido,**Vniéres sabido, &c.*

I shall haue knowne, I haue
 knowne.

Thou shalt haue knowne,
 Thou hast knowne, &c.

Infinitine.

Present.	<i>Sabér,</i>	To know.
Perfect.	<i>Auér sabido,</i>	To haue knowne.
Future.	<i>Estár por sabér,</i>	To be to know.
Gerund.	<i>Auér de sabér,</i> <i>Sabiéndo,</i>	To ought to know. Knowing.

The declining of the Verbe *Traér*, which signifieth both to Bring, and weare apparell.

Indicative Present.

Yo tráygo,
Tráes,
Tráe,
Traémos,
Traéys,
Tráen,

I bring.
 Thou bringest.
 He bringeth.
 We bring.
 Ye bring.
 They bring.

Imperfekt.

Yo trayá,
Trayás,
Trayá,
Trayamos,
Trayádes,
Trayán,

I did bring.
 Thou didst bring.
 He did bring.
 We did bring.
 Ye did bring.
 They did bring.

To trúxe,
Truxíste,
Trúxo,
Truxímos,
Truxístes,
Truxéron,

Some doe write *tráxe*, changing the *u* into *a*, throughout all the persons.

To be *trajdo*,
Has *trajdo*, &c.

To *auia* *trajdo*,
Auia *trajdo*, &c.

Traeré,
Traerás,
Traerá,
Traerémos,
Traeréys,
Traerán,

To be & *tengo de tra-*
er, &c.

Tráctu,
Tráyga aquél,

1. Perfect.

I brought.
Thou broughtest.
He brought.
We brought.
Ye brought.
They brought.

2. Perfect.

I haue brought.
Thou haft brought, &c.

Pluperfect.

I had brought.
Thou hadst brought, &c.

Future.

I shall or will bring.
Thou shalt or wilt bring.
He shall or will bring.
We shall or will bring.
Ye shall or will bring.
They shall or will bring.

2. Future.

I shall, will, must, or ought to bring, &c.

Imperative.

Bring thou.
Let him bring.

Traygámos

Traygámos nosótros,
Traed vosótros,
Tráygan aquéllos,

Oprtaine Future, and Present of the Subiunctive.

Aunque,

To tráyga,
Tráygas,
Tráyga,
Traygámos,
Traygáis,
Tráygan,

Aunque,

To truxésse tru-
xéra, &c.
Truxésses,

Truxésse,
Truxéssemos,
Truxéssedes,
Truxéssen,

It is also many times read *traxésse*, changing the *u* into *a*, as I haue said before.

Aunque,

To áya trajdo,
Ayas trajdo, &c.

Let vs bring.
Bring ye.
Let them bring.

Although.

I bring.
Thou bringest.
He bringeth.
We bring.
Ye bring.
They bring.

Imperfet.

Although.

I brought or did bring.

Thou broughtst or didst bring.
He brought or did bring.
We brought or did bring.
Ye brought or did bring.
They brought or did bring.

Perfect.

Although.

I haue brought.
Thou hast brought, &c.

2. Perfect.

2. Perfect.

*Quando,**To ūne traydo,
Vniste traydo, &c.**Aunque,**To truxéra,
Truxéras,
Truxéra,
Truxéramos,
Truxérades,
Truxéran,**Traxéra* is also found in many Authors.*Likemise with the auxiliar, Englished like this,
and as followeth.**To vuiéffe & vniéra tray-* I would or should haue
do,*Vuiéfses & vniéras tray-* Thou wouldest or shouldst
haue brought, &c.*Vnertaine tense.**To traería,
Traerías,
Tracería,
Traeríamos,
Traeríades,
Tracerían,**I should or would bring.
Thou shouldst or wouldest bring.
He should or would bring.
We should or would bring.
Ye should or would bring.
They should or would bring.**Future.**Quando, Si,
To truxérc,**When, If.
I shall or will bring, I bring.**Truxéres,**When.**I haue brought.
Thou haſt brought, &c.**Pluperfect.**Although.**¶ I had brought.
¶ Thou hadſt brought.
¶ He had brought.
¶ We had brought.
¶ Ye had brought.
¶ They had brought.*

123

A Grammar Spanish and English.

Truxéres, Thou shalt or wilt bring, Thou
bringest.

Truxére, He shall or will bring, He bringeth.

Truxéremos, We shall or will bring, We bring.

Truxéredes, Ye shall or will bring, Ye bring.

Truxéren, They shall or will bring, They bring.

There is often found *Traxere* for *Truxere*.

*After the Future.**Quando, Si,
To vniére traydo,**Vniéres traydo, &c.**When, If.**I shall haue brought, I haue
brought.**Thou shalt haue brought,
Thou haſt brought, &c.**Infinitive.**Traér,
Auér Trajdo,
Estár por traér,
Trayéndo,**To bring.
To haue brought.
To be to bring.
Bringing.**The declining of the Verbe Cabér.*

This Verbe *Cabér*, for that it hath diuers significations, is somewhat hard to be expressed in English: for it signifieth sometimes to be contained or to goe into a thing; as, *Tóda el agua no cábe en el jarró*, All the water will not be contained or goe into the pot. Sometimes it is to happen, or fall to ones lot or share; as, *Estóme cábe por mi parte*, This falleth to me for my part. *Estóme cípo en fuérte*, This came or fell to me by lot, that is to say, I haue had this by fortune. This Verbe is moreouer otherwise applied, and must be vnderstood by the words annexed vnto it: as almost at the beginning of *Celestine*, *Cómo cípo en ingenio de tal hombre cómo tu?* How hath it entered into the

the minde of such a man as thou? In *Torquemellas Jardin de flores*, are these phrases, *Entre nosotros bien cábe*, fol. 119. It is well accepted and receiued amongst vs. *Los Moscotitas les cábe su parte*, 464. The Moscouites haue their part of them. *Esto es engañar que no puede cabér en gente de razón*, fol. 503. This deceit or subtletie hath no place amongst men of reason. *En que iuicio cábe?* Into what judgement can it sinke?

Indicatiue Present.

To quépo,
Cábes,
Cábe,
Cabémos,
Cabéys,
Cáben,

I am contained, &c. with the Verbe, I am.

Imperfet.

Yocabia,
Cabias,
Cabia,
Cabiamos,
Cabiades,
Cabian,

I was contained, &c.

First Perfect.

To cípe,
Cupiste,
Cípo,
Cupimos,
Cupistes,
Cupíron,

I was or haue beene contained, &c.

2. Perfect.

2. Perfect.

To he catido,
Has cabido, &c.

I haue beene contained, &c.

Pluperfet.

To auia cauido, &c. I had beene contained, &c.

Future.

To cabré,
Cabrás,
Cabrá,
Cabrémos,
Cabréys,
Cabrán,

I shall or will be contained, &c.

2. Future.

*To he & téngo de
cabér,* &c.

I shall, will, must, or ought to be contained, &c.

This Verbe wanteth the Imperatiue.

Optatiue Future, and Present of the Subiunctiue.

Aunque,

Although.

O quepa,
Quepas,
Quépa,
Quepámos,
Quepáys,
Quépan,

I be contained.
Thou beest contained, &c.

God graft

Imperfec.

Imperfect.

*Aunque,**To cupiéssse, Cupiéra, &c.* Although.*Cupiésses,**Cupiéffe,**Cupiéssimos,**Cupiéssedes,**Cupiéffen,**I were contained.**Thou wert contained.**He was contained, &c.**Would**Opinion.**Aunque,*

Although.

*I pray God**Yo áya cabido, &c.* I haue bin contained, &c.

2. Perfect.

*Quando,**Yo áue cabido,**Vuiste cabido, &c.*

When.

I haue beene contained.

Thou hast bin contained, &c.

Pluperfect.

*Aunque,**To cupiéra,* Although.*Cupiéras,**Cupiéra,**Cupiéramos,**Cupiérades,**Cupíoran,**I had beene contained.**Thou hadst beene contained.**He had beene contained, &c.**Would**God*

Likewise

Likewise with the auxiliar, Englished like this,
and as followeth.*To vuiéssse & vuiéra**cabido,**Vuiésses & vuiéras**cabido, &c.*I would, or should haue
beene contained.Thou wouldest, or shouldst
haue beene contained, &c.

Uncertaine tense.

*To cabria,**Cabriás,**Cabría,**Cabriámos,**Cabriádes,**Cabrián,*I should or would be contained.
Thou shouldest or wouldest be con-
tained, &c.

Future.

When, If.

*Quando, Si,**To cupiére,**Cupiéres,**Cupiére,**Cupiéramos,**Cupiéredes,**Cupíeren,*I shall or will be contained.
Thou shalt or wilt be contained,
&c.

After the Future.

*Quando, Si,**To vuiére cabido,**Vuiéres cabido, &c.*

When, If.

I shall haue beene contained.

Thou shalt haue beene con-
tained, &c.

Infinitine.

*Cabér,**Auer cabido,*

To be contained.

To haue beene contained.

Estár

Estar por cabér, To be able to be contained.
Anér de cabér, To ought to be contained.
Cabiéndo, Being contained.

The Verbe *Veér*, differeth in nothing from *Leér* aboue coniugated, sauing that it often loseth the first *e* in the Infinitive, being written *ver*. and maketh his participle *visto*, and not *veydo*. There is many times found in the first and third person singular of the Perfect in the Indicative, *vide*, and *vido*, in stead of *vi* and *vió*.

The Verbe *Valér* which is in the Indicative *valgo*, maketh in the future Tense of the same mood, *valdré*, *valdrás*, *valdrá*, *valdrémos*, *valdréys*, *valdrán*.

The declining of the Verbe *Dezir*, to say, or tell.

Indicative present.

<i>To digo,</i>	I say.
<i>Dizes,</i>	Thou saiest.
<i>Díze,</i>	He saith.
<i>Dezimos,</i>	We say.
<i>Dezis,</i>	Ye say.
<i>Dízen,</i>	They say.

Imperfect.

<i>To dezía,</i>	I did say.
<i>Dezias,</i>	Thou didst say.
<i>Dezia,</i>	He did say.
<i>Dezíamos,</i>	We did say.
<i>Deziades,</i>	Ye did say.
<i>Dezian,</i>	They did say.

Perfect.

1. Perfect.

<i>Yo díxe,</i>	I said.
<i>Dixiste,</i>	Thou saidst.
<i>Díxo,</i>	He said.
<i>Diximos,</i>	We said.
<i>Dixistes,</i>	Ye said.
<i>Dixerón,</i>	They said.

2. Perfect.

<i>Yo he dicho,</i>	I haue said.
<i>Has dicho, &c.</i>	Thou hast said, &c.

Pluperfect.

<i>Yo ania dicho,</i>	I had said.
<i>Anias dicho, &c.</i>	Thou hadst said, &c.

Future.

<i>To diré,</i>	I shall or will say.
<i>Dirás,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt say.
<i>Dirá,</i>	He shall or will say.
<i>Dirémos,</i>	We shall or will say.
<i>Diréys,</i>	Ye shall or will say.
<i>Dirán,</i>	They shall or will say.

2. Future.

<i>Yo he & tengo de de-</i>	I shall, will, must, or ought
<i>zir, &c.</i>	to say, &c.

Imperative.

<i>Di tu, díga aquél,</i>	Say thou, Let him say.
<i>Dígamos nosotros,</i>	Let vs say.
<i>Dezid vosotros,</i>	Say yee.
<i>Dígan aquéllos,</i>	Let them say.

K

Optative

Aunque,
Yo diga,
Dígas,
Diga,
Digámos,
Digáys,
Digan,

Aunque,
Yo dixéssse, dixerá, &c.

Dixésses,
Dixéssse,
Dixésssemos,
Dixéssedes,
Dixéssen,

Aunque,
Yo áya dicho,
Ayas dicho, &c.

Quando,
Yo vine dicho,
Viste dicho, &c.

Aunque,
Yo dixerá,
Dixerás,
Dixerá,
Dixerámos,
Dixerádes,
Dixerán,

Although.

I say.

Thou sayest.

He saith.

We say.

Ye say.

They say.

Imperfect.

Although.

I said or did say.

Thou saidst or didst say.

He said or did say.

We said or did say.

Ye said or did say.

They said or did say.

Perfect.

Although.

God

I haue said.

Thou hast said, &c.

2. Perfect.

When.

I haue said.

Thou hast said, &c.

Pluperfect.

Although.

I had said.

Thou hadst said.

He had said, &c.

God

Likewise

Likewise with the auxiliar, Englished like this,
and as followeth.

Yo vuiéssse & vniéra dí- I would or should haue
cho,
Vuiésses & vniéras di- Thou wouldst or shouldst
cho, &c. haue said, &c.

Uncertaine Tense.

Yo diría,
Dirías,
Diría,
Diríamos,
Diríades,
Dirían,

Future.

Quando, Si,
Yo dixeré,
Dixerés,
Dixeré,
Dixeremos,
Dixeredes,
Dixerén,

When, If.
I shall or will say, I say.
Thou shalt or wilt say, Thou sayest.
He shall or will say, He saith.
We shall or will say, We say.
Ye shall or will say, Ye say.
They shall or will say, They say.

After the Future.

Quando, Si,
Yo vuiére dicho,
Vuiéres dicho, &c.

When, If.
I shall haue said, I haue said.
Thou shalt haue said, Thou
hast said, &c.

Infinitive.

Dezir,
Añér dicho,
Estar por dezir,
Añér de dezir,
Diziéndo,

To say.
To haue said.
To be to say.
To ought to say.
Saying.

The declining of the Verbes *Dormir* and *Morir*, which for that they are both of one Coniugation, and doe in euery thing very much agree, shall be coniugated both together.

Indicative Present.

<i>Yo duérmo, muéro,</i>	I sleepe, I die.
<i>Duérmes, muéres,</i>	Thou sleepest, thou diest.
<i>Duérme, muére,</i>	He sleepeth, he dieth.
<i>Dormimos, morimos,</i>	We sleepe, we die.
<i>Dormís, morís,</i>	Ye sleepe, ye die.
<i>Duérmen, muéren,</i>	They sleepe, they dic.

Imperfect.

<i>Yo dormia, moria,</i>	I did sleepe, I did die.
<i>Dormias, morias,</i>	Thou didst sleepe, thou didst die.
<i>Dormia, moria,</i>	He did sleepe, he did die.
<i>Dormiamos, moriamos,</i>	We did sleepe, we did die.
<i>Dormiades, moriades,</i>	Ye did sleepe, ye did die.
<i>Dormian, morian,</i>	They did sleepe, they did die.

1. Perfect.

<i>Yo dormí, morí,</i>	I slept, I died.
<i>Dormiste, moriste,</i>	Thou sleptst, thou diedst.
<i>Durmió, murió,</i>	He slept, he died.
<i>Durmimos, murímos,</i>	We slept, we died.
<i>Durmistes, muristes,</i>	Ye slept, ye died.
<i>Durmieron, murieron,</i>	They slept, they died.

2. Perfect.

<i>Yo he dormido, muérto,</i>	I haue slept, I haue died,
<i>&c.</i>	&c.

Pluperfect.

Pluperfect.

Yo auia dormido, muérto, I had slept, I had died,
&c.

It is to be noted that *Morir* maketh his Participle *muérto*, and taketh *sér* for an auxiliar. Sometimes it is vsed in the actiue signification, as in the Italian Language, and signifieth killed; as *El ha muerto a un hombre*, He hath killed a man.

Future.

<i>Yo dormiré, moriré,</i>	I shall or will sleepe, I shall or will die, &c.
<i>Dormirás, morirás,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt sleepe.
<i>Dormirá, morirá,</i>	He shall or will sleepe.
<i>Dormirémos, morirémos,</i>	We shall or will sleepe.
<i>Dormiréis, moriréis,</i>	Ye shall or will sleepe.
<i>Dormirán, morirán,</i>	They shall or will sleepe.

2. Future.

Yo he & tengo de dormir, I shall, will, must, or ought to sleepe, to die, &c.

Imperative.

<i>Duérmetu, muére tu,</i>	Sleepe thou, die thou.
<i>Duérma aquél, muéra aquél,</i>	Let him sleepe, let him die.
<i>Durmámos, murámos nosótrios,</i>	Let vs sleepe, let vs die.
<i>Dormid, morid vosotros,</i>	Sleepe ye, die ye.
<i>Duérman, muéran aquél-los,</i>	Let them sleepe, let them die.

Optative

Optative Future, and Present of the Subiunctive.

Aunque,

Although.

Yo duérma, muriéra,

Duérmas, muéras,

Duérma, muéra,

Durmámos, murámos,

Durmáys, muráys,

Duérman, muéran,

I sleepe, I die.

Thou sleepest, thou diest.

He sleepeth, he dieth.

We sleepe, we die.

God yee sleepe, yee die.

They sleepe, they die.

Ortala

Imperfect.

Aunque,

Although.

Yo durmiese, muriiese,

durmiera, muriéra,

etc.

I slept or did sleepe.

I died or did die,

etc.

Dios

Thou sleptst, or didst
sleepe.

Plurielle à Dieu

Durmiésses, muriésses,

durmieras, muriéras,

etc.

He slept or did sleepe.

We slept or did sleepe.

Durmiéssedes, muriéssedes,

durmierades, muriérades,

etc.

Ye slept or did sleepe.

Durmiéssen, muriéssen,

durmieran, muriéran,

They slept or did sleep.

Perfect.

Aunque,

Although.

Ortala

Yo áya dormido, &c.

I pray God

I haue slept, &c.

2. Perfect.

Quando,

Yo áue dormido, &c.

When,

I haue slept, &c.

Pluperfect.

Pluperfect.

Although.

Aunque,

Yo dormiéra, muriéra,

Durmiéras, muriéras,

Durmiéra, muriéra,

Durmiéramos, muriéramos,

Durmiérades, muriérades,

Durmiéran, muriéran,

Likewise with the auxiliar, Englished like this,
and as followeth.Yo vuiesse & vuiéra
dormido, &c.Yo fuésses & fuéra
muerto, &c.I would or should haue
slept, &c.I had died, I would or
should haue died, &c.

Uncertaine Tense.

Yo dormiría, moriría,

Dormirías, morirías,

Dormiría, moriría,
Dormiríamos, moriríamos,Dormiriades, moririades,
Dormirían, morirían,I should or would sleepe, I
should or would die, &c.Thou shouldest or wouldest
sleepe.He shouldest or would sleep
Wee shouldest or would
sleepe.Ye shouldest or would sleep.
They shouldest or would
sleepe.

Future.

K 4

Future.

*Quando, Si,**Yo durmiére, muriére,**Durmieres, murières,**Durmíere, muriére,**Durmíeremos, muriéremos,**Durmíeredes, muriéredes,**Durmíeren, muriéren,*

When, If.

*I shall or will sleepe, I shall or will die, &c.**Thou shalt or wilt sleepe.**He shall or will sleepe.**We shall or will sleepe.**Ye shall or will sleepe.**They shall or will sleepe.*

After the Future.

Quando, Si,

When, If.

Yo uiére dormido, &c. *I shall haue slept, I haue slept, &c.**Quando, Si,*

When, If.

Yo fuére muerto, &c. *I shall be dead, I am dead, &c.*

Infinitive.

Dormir, morir, *To sleepe, to die.**Auér dormíto, sér muerto,* *To haue slept, to be dead.**Auér de dormir, morir,* *To ought to sleepe, to die.**Ser por dormir, morir,* *To be to sleepe, to die.**Estár por dormir, morir,* *To be ready to sleep, to die.**Durmiendo, muriendo,* *Sleeping, Dying.*

Morir is construed with *me, te, se*, and is then an actiue as concerning the voice, taking *Hauér* for an auxiliar, but in the perfect it is seldome found but in the third person. It maketh also *Yo soy muerto*, I haue died.

The

The declining of the Verbes *yr* and *Andár*.

which I will likewise coniugate together, for that their signification is alike, although they differ something in their vse, whereof I purpose to speake a word at the end.

Indicative, Present.

*Yo voy, ándo,**Vas ándas,**Va, ánda,**Tmos or vamos, andámos,**Ts or váys, andáys,**Van, ándan,**I goe.**Thou goest.**He goeth.**We goe.**Ye goe.**They goe.*

Imperfet.

*Yo yua, andáua,**Tuas, andáuas,**Tua andáua,**Tuamos, andáuamos,**Tuades, andáuades,**Tuan, andáuan,**I did goe.**Thou didst goe.**He did goe.**We did goe.**Ye did goe.**They did goe.*

1. Perfect.

*Yo fui or fué, andáue,**Fuiste or fuéste, andáuiste,**Fué, andáuo,**Fuimos or fuémos, andáuimos,**Fuistes or fuéstes, andáuistes,**Fuérón, andáuérón,**I went.**Thou wentest.**He went.**We went.**Ye went.**They went.*

I haue put downe *Fui* and *fué*, *Fuiste* and *fuéste*, *Fuimos* and *fuémos*, *Fuistes* and *fuéstes*, for that *Miranda* maketh a distinction betwene *Fué*, *fuéste*, *fuémos*,

mos, fuéſtes, which he faith to be of *yr*: and *Fui*, *fuiste*, *fuimos*, and *fuistes*, of *ser*. Notwithstanding I haue alwaies found *fui* and the rest, in the same signification of *fué*, and I doe not remember to haue read it otherwise.

2. Perfect. And Pluperfect.

To be & aniasido,
andádo, &c. I haue and had beene, I haue
and had gone, &c.

Likewise.

To soy y'do,
Tu éres y'do,
El es y'do, else ha y'do,
Ellos han y'do,
Se han y'do,
Tdos son,

I haue gone.
Thou haſt gone.
He hath gone.
They haue gone, &c.

Likewise.

To me auia y'do,
Tu te auias y'do,
El se auia y'do,
Nos auiamos y'do,
Os auiaſdes y'do,
Anianſe y'do, or ſe auian
y'do,

I had gone.
Thou hadſt gone.
He had gone.
We had gone.
Ye had gone.
They had gone.

The Future of *Andár*, which is *Andaré*, is but ſeldome in vſe.

To yré,
Trás,
Trá,
Trémos,
Tréis,
Trán,

I ſhall or will goe.
Thou ſhalt or wilt goe.
He ſhall or will goe.
We ſhall or will goe.
Ye ſhall or will goe.
They ſhall or will goe.

2. Future.

2. Future.

To be & tengo de
jr, &c,

I ſhall, will, muſt, or
ought to goe, &c.

Imperative.

Ve tu, ánda tu,
Váya aquél, ánde aquél,
Vámos, andémos nosótros,
Td, andád vosótros,
Váyan, ánden aquéllos,
Ve te de ay,

Goethou.
Let him goe.
Let vs goe.
Goe ye.
Let them goe.
Get thee gone from thence

Optative Future, and Present of the
Subiunctive.

Aunque,

Tváya, ánde,
Váyas, ándes,
Váya, ánde,
Vámos, andémos,
Váys, andéys,
Váyan, ánden.

Although.

I goe.
Thou goest.
He goeth.
We goe.
Ye goe.
They goe.

Imperfect.

Aunque,
To fuéſſe, anduuiéſſe, fu-
éra, anduuiéra, &c.
Fuéſſes, anduuiéſſes,
Fuéſſe, anduuiéſſe,
Fuéſſemos, anduuiéſſe-
mos,
Fuéſſedes, anduuiéſſe-
des,
Fuéſſen, anduuiéſſen,

Although.
I went or did goe.

Thou wentſt or diſt
gое.
He went or did goe.
Wee went or did goe.
Ye went or did goe.

They went or did goe.
Perfect.

Perfect.

Aunque,

To áya Sido, séa an-
dado,
To séa ydo, &c,

Although.

I pray God

I haue beene : I haue
gone, &c.

Second Perfect.

Quando,

To úne sido, andado, &c. I haue beene, I haue gone,
&c.

When.

Pluperfect.

Aunque,

To fuéra, anduuiéra,
Fuéras, anduuieras,
Fuéra, anduuiéra,
Fuéramos, anduuiéramos,
Fuérades, anduuiérades,
Fuérán, anduuiérán,

Although.

I had gone.
Thou hadst gone.
He had gone.
We had gone.
Ye had gone.
They had gone.

Likewise.

To fuéesse & fuéra, ydo, I had gone, I would or should
andado, &c. haue gone, &c.To vuiéesse & vuiéra, I had gone, I would or should
ydo, andado, &c. haue gone.

Uncertaine Tense.

To yría, andaria,
Trías, andarias,
Tría, andaria,
Triamos, andariamos, We should or would goe.
Triades, andariades, Ye should or would goe.
Trían, andarian,I should or would goe.
Thou shouldst or wouldst goe.
He should or would goe.
They should or would goe.

Future.

Future.

Quando, Si,

To fuére, anduuiére,
Fuéres, anduuiéres,

Fuére, anduuiére,

Fuéremos anduuiéremos, We shall or will goe, we goe.

Fuéredes, anduuiéredes, Ye shall or will goe, ye goe.

Fuéren, anduuiéren, They shall or will goe, they
goe.

When, If.

I shall or will goe, I goe.
Thou shalt or wilt goe,
Thou goest.

He shal or wil goe, he goeth.

We shall or will goe, we goe.

Ye shall or will goe, ye goe.

They shall or will goe, they
goe.

After the future.

Quando, Si,

To vuiére, Sido, andá-
do, &c.

To fuére ydo, andado, &c. Idem.

When, If.

I shall haue beene, I shall
haue gone, I haue gone, &c.To vuiére, Sido, andá-
do, &c. Idem.

Idem.

Infinitive.

Tr, andár ; Auér ydo,
Hauér de yr, andár,
Ser por yr, andár,
Téndo, andando,To goe, to haue gone.
To ought to goe.
To be to goe.
Going.

As touching the use of these two Verbes, it is requisite to understand, that *Tr* doth alwaies denote the action of going and trauelling from place to place, but *andár* signifieth as to goe wandring here and there, without determining any place; and hath sometimes the force of *Venir* to come, as *ánda acá*, come hither, and is spoken as it were in a manner of choller and commanding, as, *Andad páraruín, pérro, móro, judío, heréje, ladrón, puto*; Get thee gone for a wicked one as thou art, dog, moore, hereticke, theefe,

142 *A Grammar Spanish and English.*
 theefe, whorchunter. It is taken moreouer in certaine
 actions which doe not signifie going in any place, as
En que ándas? What doest thou? *ánda os á dezir*
donáyres, goe thou to tell some iests. It behoueth
 also to note that *va* the third person of *voy*, is taken
 in two or three diuers significations, as, *Que va en*
élllo? What doth that import? *No va en élllo náda*; It
 importeth nothing. *Lo que va de mi al Réy, ésto va*
de vos a un sábio, Looke how much I come short of
 the King, so much is the difference betwixt you and
 a wise man. *Múcho va de Pédro á Pédro*. There is
 a great deale of oddes betweene Peter and Peter.
Como os va en éssa tierra? How do you finde your
 selfe in that country or quarter? *Cómo os fué en el ca-*
míno de Milán? How was it with you in the iourney
 of Milan? *Todo va bien*: All goes well. I might
 here put downe many other examples, but I remit
 them to the diligence of the Students. Yet it shall be
 needfull to annex hereunto the declining of the
 Verbe *Venir*, for a conclusion, which is as followeth.

Indicative present.

To vengo,
Viénes,
Viéne,
Venémos,
Venis,
Viénen,

I come.
 Thou commest.
 He commeth.
 We come.
 Ye come.
 They come.

Imperfect.

I did come.
 Thou didst come.
 He did come.

To venia,
Venias,
Venia,

Veniamos,

A Grammar Spanish and English.

Veniamos,
Venias,
Venian,

We did come.
 Ye did come.
 They did come.

1. Perfect.

To vine,
Veniste,
Vino,
Venimos,
Venistes,
Vinieron,

I came.
 Thou camest.
 He came.
 We came.
 Ye came.
 They came.

2. Perfect. And Pluperfect.

To be & aní a venido, &c. I haue, & had come, &c.
To soy, fuí, & éra venido, I haue, was, & had come.

Future.

To verné & vendré,
Vernás & vendrás,
Verná & vendrá,
Vernémos & vendrémos,
Vernéys & vendréys,
Vernán & vendrán,

I shall or will come.
 Thou shalt or wilt come.
 He shall or will come.
 We shall or will come.
 Ye shall or will come.
 They shall or will come.

2. Future.

To be & tengo de
venir, &c.

I shall or will come, or I must
 come.

Imperative.

Ven tú, ven acá,
Vénga aquél,
Vengámos nosotros,
Venid vosotros,
Véngan aquéllos,

Come thou, come hither.
 Let him come.
 Let vs come.
 Come ye.
 Let them come.

Optative

Optative Future, and Present of the Subiunctive.

Aunque,

Although.

Ordo
Yo venga,
Vengas,
Venga,
Vengamos,
Vengáys,
Véngan,

I come.
Thou commest.
He commeth.
We come.
Ye come.
They come.

Imperfect.

Aunque,

Although.

Ordo
Yo viniéssse, viniéra, &c.
Viniéssses,
Viniéssse,
Viniésssemos,
Viniéssedes,
Viniéssen,

I came or did come.
Thou cam'st or didst come.
He came or did come.
We came or did come.
Ye came or did come.
They came or did come

2. Perfect.

Aunque,

Although.

Ordo
Yo áya venido,
Séa venido, &c.

I pray God
I haue come, &c.

2. Perfect.

When.

I haue come, &c.

Pluperfect.

Pluperfect.

Although.

Yo viniéra,
Viniéras,
Viniéra,
Viniéramos,
Viniérades,
Viniéran,

I had come.
Thou hadst come.
He had come.
We had come.
Ye had come.
They had come.

Likewise with the Auxiliar, Englished like this,
and as followeth.

Yo vniéssse & vniéra veni- I would or should haue
do, &c. come, &c.

Likewise.

Yo fuéssse & fuéra ve- I had come, I would or
nido, should haue come.

Uncertain Tense.

Yo vernía & vendría,
Vernías & vendrías,

I should or would come.
Thou shouldst or wouldst come.

Vernía & vendría,
Verníamos & vendríamos,
Verníades & vendríades,
Vernian & vendrian,

He should or would come.
We should or would come.
Ye should or would come.
They should or would come.

Future.

When, If.

I shall or will come, I come.
Thou shalt or wilt come, Thou
commest.

Vniére,

Quando, Si.
Yo vniére,
Vniéres,

I.

Optative Future, and Present of the Subjunctive.

Aunque,

Although.

*Yo venga,**Vengas,**Venga,**Vengámos,**Vengáys,**Véngan,*

I come.

Thou commest.

He commeth.

We come.

Ye come.

They come.

Imperfect.

Aunque,

Although.

*Yo viniese, viniéra, &c.**Viniésses,*

I came or did come.

Thou cam'st or didst come.

He came or did come.

We came or did come.

Ye came or did come.

They came or did come

2. Perfect.

Aunque,

Although.

I pray God

I haue come, &c.

2. Perfect.

Quando,

When.

Yo vine venido, &c.

I haue come, &c.

Pluperfect.

Pluperfect.

Aunque,

Although.

*Yo viniéra,**Viniéras,**Viniéra,**Viniéramos,**Viniérades,**Viniérán,*

I had come.

Thou hadst come.

He had come.

We had come.

Ye had come.

They had come.

Likewise with the Auxiliar, Englished like this,
and as followeth.*Yo vniésses & vniéra vení-* I would or should haue
do, &c. come, &c.

Likewise.

Yo fuésses & fuéra ve- I had come, I would or
nido, should haue come.

Uncertaine Tense.

*Yo vernia & vendría,**Vernias & vendrías,*

I should or would come.

Thou shouldst or wouldst

come.

*Vernia & vendría,**Verníamos & vendríamos,* We should or would come.*Verníades & vendriades,* Ye should or would come.*Vernian & vendrian,* They should or would

come.

Future.

When, If.

I shall or will come, I come.

Thou shalt or wilt come, Thou

commest.

Viniére,

*Quando, Si.**Yo viniéra,**Viniéres,*

*Viníre,*Hee shall or will come, Hee
commeth.*Viniéremos,*We shall or will come, We
come.*Viniéredes or viniérdes,* Ye shall or will come, ye come.They shall or will come, they
come.*After the Future.**Quando, Si,*
*Yo vuiére & fuére ve-
nido, &c.*When, If.
I shall haue come, I haue
come, &c.*Infinitive.**Venir,*
Auér & ser venido,
Auér de venir,
Estár por venir,
*Viniéndo,*To come.
To be come.
To ought to come.
To be to come.
Comming.

Here might a difficultie arise concerning *Yo he venido*, and *Yo soy venido*, but to make it cleare, it behoueth to know that the first signifieth the action and motion of the comming; and the second denoteth the repose or rest after the comming; as if one demandeth, *Quién ha venido acá?* who is come hither? It shall be vnderstood of a person that is no longer to be present. In regard of the repose or rest, they may say, *v.m. séa bien venido*; you are welcome, where the person is seene to be present.

It furthermore requireth to note, that when these Verbes *voy*, *ándo*, and *vengo*, are with the Verbe *sóy*, they be read in the plurall number; as, *Venidos sómos*, We are come; *ídolos son*, they are gone; *Andádos son los días*, The dayes are passed.

It

It ought not to be forgotten to tell, how that the Future of the Indicative, in all Verbes is oftentimes expressed by the Infinitive, adioyning thereto the Verbe *he*, *has*, *ha*, and interposing these Particles, *me*, *te*, *se*, *le*, *la*, *lo*, *les*, *las*, *los*: *Llamárme has*; *dezírte he*; *hazérse ha*; *vérla has*; *querérla he*; *embiárte ha*, &c. for, *Llamerás me*; *te diré* or *diré te*; *harás se*; *lo verás*; *querré la*; *le embiará*, &c. and the signification is not altered, notwithstanding there be two of the said Particles interposed, as, *embiárte la he*, *forte la embiare*, I will send it thee. The like interpolation is made sometimes in other Tenses, wherein the Verbe put after is changed into the Particle *hia*, which should seeme to be the latter part of the Verbe diuided, as *Dezírte hia*, in stead of *diría te*: *vérla hias*, for *verías lo*. And so of the rest, which the diligent may obserue in reading: This is done by a figure called Epenthesis.

The second Person plurall of the Imperative, having after him one of these Particles, *le*, *la*, *lo*, or their plurall, *les*, *las*, *los*, changeth almost alwayes his finall letter, which is *d*, to the first of the Particle; so that it is nothing but a Metathelis, or a transposition of the two said letters, as in stead of *veéldo*, they put *veéldo*; *dezílde* for *dez'idle*; *llamálda* for *llamád-la*, and so generally of all.

Likewise the said *d* of the Imperative is sometimes taken away by the figure Apocope, as *Andáos*, for *andádos*, &c. And *s* in the first Person plurall both of the Imperative and Future, as *vámonos* for *vámos nos*, *yrémonos* for *yrémos nos*, &c.

I haue often found that the Infinitives hauing these abouesaid Particles adioyned, lose their finall letter *r*, taking in place therof an *l*, which seemeth

to take away the harshnesse of the sound, as *vello* instead of *verlo*; *dezille* for *dezirle*, and many others: and this is done by a Figure named Antistoecon. It behoueth also to note, that these said Particles, and generally all others which are construed with the Infinitive, as, *me, te, se, nos, and as*, oblique case of *vos*, is in such sort thereto conioyned, that it maketh but one only word or diction.

If I should goe about to coniugate all Verbes, as well those that be regular as irregulars, I should cause this booke to swell into a great volume, and would therein but little auiale the Readers: wherefore those already put downe shall suffice for the present, as being all wherein is found any difficultie in their declining. It only remaineth to declare, that there are some whose Present of the Indicative is somewhat difficult to forme in regard of the Infinitive, as be those that end in *cer, zir, ger, and gir*; for *cer* maketh his present *esco* or *ezco*, as *Obedescér, obedéscō*; *agradéscér, agradézco*: *zir* allumeth *g*, as *Traduzir, tradúzgo*, which hath in the first Perfect *tradúxe*; and so likewise *induzir* and *reduzir*: *ger* and *gir* are changed into *jo*, as *Coger, cójo*; *Fingir, finjo*; *Regir, rijo*, and so forth of the rest.

Of Verbes Passiues.

Verbes Passiues are formed in two sorts; the one is by putting *se* before the Actiue, as, *Conosce*, he knoweth, *Se conosce*, he is knowne: *Vee*, he seeth, *se pseude veer*, he may be seene; &c. And the other by adioyning the passiue participle of any Verbe, to the Tenses and Persons of the Verbe *Ser*; as, *Yo soy amado*, Feminine, *amada*, I am loued; *tu éres amado*, aquél

es

es amado: *Nosotros somos amados*, Feminine, *amadas*, *vosotros soys amados*, aquéllos son *amados*. And so in euery Tense of the said Verbe.

Yet here is to be obserued, that the Participle *Sido*, in forming the Preter Tenses thereby, doth neither varie in Gender nor Number, whatsoeuer Substantiue be annexed vnto it; as, *El Señor ha sido*; *La Señora ha sido*; *Los Señores han sido*; *Las Señoras han sido*, &c. And the reason is, that all Particples ioyned with the Verbe *auér* to forme the aforesaid Tenses, doe neuer alter their Gender or Number; as, *Yo he enseñado*, *la mugér ha enñado*; *Los maestros han* and *auian enseñado*, &c. Except *Sido* be interposed, for then it varieh according to the Gender and Number of the Substantiue; as, *Yo he sido enseñado*; *La mugér ha sido enseñada*, *Los hómbres han & auian sido enseñados*: and so of the rest.

Of Verbes Impersonals.

There be some Verbes which ought to be named Impersonals, for that they are only found in the third person of euery Tense, and are commonly knowne in English by the signe, *it*, and sometimes by the signe *there*, as are, *Cumplir, ser menester, conuerir, importar, parecer, pertenescér, acaescér, acontecer, plazér, agradar, pesár, abastár*, and others the like, which are vsed in this manner.

Me cumples dezir.

It behoueth me, or Is requisite to say.

Es menester que yo diga,

It is fit, or behouefull that I say.

A mi me conuiene,

It is expedient, or fit for me.

Note importa à ti, It nothing concerneth thee.
Ami me paréce, It seemeth to me.
A Iuán pertenésce, It appertaineth to Iohn.
A tódos acaésce or acon-
tésce pecár, It befalleth, or hapneth vn-
to all to sin.
Ami me pláce, or Ami
me agráda, It pleaseth, or contenteth
me.
A tódos nos pésa de tu
mal, We are all sorry, or grieved
at thy hurt.
Note abásta à ti? &c. Is it not enough for thee?

They be as well found in the plurall as the Latine
 Impersonals: as,

Múchas cósas acontésceen Many things fall out not
no pensádas, thought vpon.
No me importáuan náda These matters did nothing
éstas cósas, concerne me.

Of Gerunds.

The Spaniards haue but only one Gerund ending
 in *do*, for the rest they vse with the Infinitiue mood,
 adioyning thereto the particle *a*, and this is to be vnder-
 stood of Verbes signifying motion or repose, as
Estár, yr, venir. Examples.

No estéys à hablar de mi, Be ye not to speake of me.
To vengo à dezir mi pa- I come to tell my aduice.
recer,

Vámos à morir por la fe Let vs goe die for the faith
de Christo, of Christ.

As concerning the Gerund in *do*, that of the first
 Coniugation shall be formed of the Infinitiue, by
 changing *ar* into *ando*, as *Amár, amándo;* *Estár,*
estándo, &c. That of the second shall change *er* into
yendo,

yendo, as, Leer, leyéndo; *Entender, entendiendo,* &c.
 That of the third must change *r* into *endo*, as, *Oyr, oy-*
endo; *dezir, diciéndo;* *Venir, Viniéndo:* but it beho-
 ueth to note that in many the *e* which is the penul-
 time of the Infinitiue, is changed into *i* in the Ge-
 rund, as you see that *dezir* maketh *diziéndo*, and not
deziéndo; *Sentir, sintiendo;* *Corregir, corrigiendo:*
Morir maketh *muriéndo*, changing the *o* into *u*; and
 so likewise *Dormir, durmiéndo.* The said Gerund is
 vsed both with the particle *en*, and without it, indif-
 ferently denoting all the three Tenses; to wit, the
 Present, the Preterperfect, and the Future, which is
 knowne by the Verbe annexed vnto it. Examples of
 the Perfect. *Endiziéndo* éstas palábras tódos se levan-
táron: In speaking these words all arose. *En llamán-*
do a la puerta luégo salímos tódos: In calling at the
 gate, we all went forth immediatly. Of the Future:
To yré en acabándo de comér: I will goe so soone as I
 shall haue dined. And without the particle *en:* *Tu*
vas comiendo por la calle, y poleroneando: Thou go-
 est eating through the street, and playing the sloth-
 full person. *To estóy trabajando, y tu te estás holgán-*do:** I am labouring, and thou standest doing nothing.
 This last example is of the Present tense, and many
 more might be alledged if it were needfull, but it
 shall suffice to know the tense of the Verbe that is ad-
 ioyned to the Gerund.

Here is to be noted that the Spaniards vse almost
 alwaies the Gerund for what Verbe or tense soever it
 be, adioyning thereto *estár*, as to say, I dine, thou
 mockest, he writeth, they say, *Estóy comiendo, estás*
burlando, está escriuiendo; I did sup, thou didst sleepe,
 he did speake; *To estána cenando, tu estánas durmién-*do, el estána bablando,** and so of all the rest.

Of Participles.

The Participles haue their Genders, signification and tenses, as the Latines, that is the Present, as, *Amante, escriviente, oyente, siruiente, creciente, mengante, paciente, teniente, cognosciente*; and others the like ending in *te*, in place whereof the Verbe is sometimes put with the Article or Pronoune *el*, and the Relatiue *que*, as, *El que áma, el que escrivie, el que oye, &c.* The Participles of the Preterit doe end in *do*, and those of the first and third Coniugation are formed by changing ther *r* of the Infinitiue into *do*, as, *Amar, amado; Oyr, oydo.* But those of the second change the syllable *er* into *ido*, as, *Sabér, sabido; Querér, querido, &c.*

There besome excepted from this rule, as *Suélto* of *soltar*: *muerto* of *morir*: *hecho* of *hacer*: *dicho* of *dezar*: *puesto* of *poner*: *escrito* of *escriuir*: *buélto* of *boluér*: *Cubierto* of *cubrir*: *Confuso* of *confundir*: *despierto* of *despertar*: *abierto* of *abrir*: *visto* of *ver*, and *enxúto* of *enxugár*. As for the Future it is vsed by circumlocution with the Verbe *ser*: as, *El que ha de ser amado*; he that shall be, or ought to be loued. *El que ha de ser muerto*; He that ought to be dead, or he which ought to die. What we haue hitherto spoken of the parts declinable shall suffice: wherfore let vs come to the others.

Of the Aduerbe.

The Aduerbe is a part of speeche, which is alwaies ioyned with the Verbe, to signific time, place, quality, number, quantity, affirmation, and diuers

diuers other accidents which shall be knowne by the composition of the same Aduerbs, whereof we will put downe the greater part: And first,

Of the Aduerbes of time.

<i>Oy,</i>	To day.
<i>Ayér,</i>	Yesterday.
<i>Ante ayér,</i>	The day before yesterday.
<i>Mañana, por la mañana,</i>	To morrow, in the morning
<i>Tárde,</i>	Late.
<i>Por la tárde,</i>	In the afternoone or evening.
<i>Tempráno,</i>	Betimes.
<i>Agbra,</i>	Now.
<i>Poco tiempo ha,</i>	A little while agone.
<i>Poco ha,</i>	A little while agoe.
<i>Despues,</i>	Since.
<i>Algúnavez,</i>	Sometimes.
<i>Amenudo,</i>	Thicke, often.
<i>En algún tiempo,</i>	Heretofore, In time past.
<i>Muchos días ha,</i>	Many daies agoe.
<i>Muchas veces,</i>	Many times.
<i>Quando,</i>	When.
<i>Mucho ha,</i>	Long agone.
<i>Entonces, en aquella</i>	Then, at that time or season.
<i>sazón,</i>	
<i>Al presente, sometimes</i>	signifieth, then, or at that
<i>time: as,</i>	
<i>Estáua al presente en</i>	He was at that time or instant in that City.
<i>aquella ciudád,</i>	
<i>Entre tanto, en éste</i>	In the meane while or space.
<i>comédo,</i>	
<i>Hasta que,</i>	Vntill that.
<i>Mientras,</i>	Whilst.

Por adelante,
 De qui adelante,
 En lo venidero,
 Désde entonces,
 Désde agóra,
 Nunca jamás,
 Aun,
 Contino,
 De contino,
 Luégo, encontinenté,
 A la hora,
 Tá,
 Siempre, siempre jamás,
 Para siempre jamás,
 Dende agóra,
 Dende entonces,
 Hasta quando,
 Hasta tanto,
 Désde que,
 De ay adelante,
 Despues acá,
 A deshora,
 De aquí a un rato,
 Cada dia,
 Cada hora,
 Cádrato,
 Cada momento,
 Quando quiera,
 Antes, ante,
 This Aduerbe Cada, is ioyned as well to the
 Noun as to the Verbe, and is said cada uno, every one;
 cada bómbr, every man; cada qual con su ygnal, every one with his equall. /...-37. Eccl. 27.9.

Hereafter.
 From this time forward.
 In time to come.
 Since then, thenceforth.
 Henceforth.
 Neuer.
 Yet.
 Continually.
 Ordinarily.
 Presently, immediatly.
 At that houre.
 Already.
 Alwaies, euermore.
 For euer and euer.
 Henceforth.
 Thenceforth.
 Till when.
 Till then.
 Since that.
 From that time forward.
 After this time.
 Vnawares, or vnlooked for.
 Within a while, ere it became
 long.
 Euery day.
 Euery houre.
 Euery whilestich, as we say.
 Euery moment.
 Whensocuer.
 Before.

Luégo

Luégo is also found in the Coniunction, where it
signifieth, then, or therefore.

Désde & dende, are Aduerbs of place so well as of
time; as, *désde aquí, allí ay tres léguas*, From hence,
thence, there be three leagues.

Ante, poco, and mucho, not being ioyned to other
particles, doe change their nature, for ante is also a
Preposition, and poco and mucho are Aduerbs of
quantity or of comparison.

The Aduerbe jamás, is seldom an affirmatiue,
but almost alwaies a negatiue, wherefore it shall like-
wise be put amongst the Aduerbs of negation.

Of the Aduerbs of place.

Aquí & acá,	Here.
Ay, allí & allá,	There.
De aquí,	From hence.
De ay, de allí,	From thence.
Por aquí & por acá,	This way.
Por ay, por allí & por allá,	That way.
Acá,	Hither.
Allá,	Thither.
Acullá,	Yonder.
De acá,	From hence.
De allá, de acullá,	From thence, or from yonder place.
Por acullá,	That way, yonder way.
Léxos,	Farre off.
Déntro, or adéntro,	Within.
Fuéra or afuéra,	Without.
Do, adó, adónde, dónde,	Where.
De do, de dónde,	From whence.
Por dónde,	Which way.
Ay abáxo, acullá abáxo,	There below.

Ack

Acá abáxo,
Házia or hácia,
Ariba, de suso,
Abáxo, de Yuso,
Atrás,
Do quicra, adó quiera,
dónde quiera,
Aquénde,
Allénde,
De ótrapártē,
Por ótrapártē,
En ótra pártē,
A ótrapártē,

Here below.
Towards.
Aboue.
Below or benceth.
Behinde.
Wheresoeuer.

On this side.
On the other side, or
beyond.
From another part or
place.
Another way.
In another place.
To another place.

It will be requisite to note that these first Aduerbs of place, to wit, *aquí*, *ay*, *allí*, and *acá*, *allá*, *acullá*, are attributed to diuers tenses and persons, that is, *aquí* and *acá* to the first, which is to say to the place where the person is that speaketh: *ay* and *allá* are applied to the second, and *allí* and *acullá* be ioyned to a third place where is some other person. *Aquí*, *ay*, and *allí*, without particles signifie rest or repose in a place, and with them they denote a motion or mouing from some place.

Example.

V. M. me escríue que yo le escríua, si está aquí su hermáno; de lo qual estóy espartádo, creyéndo que estuviésse ay, mas de séys días ha:

You write to me that I write vnto you, if your brother bee here; whereat I am amazed, thinking that he was there aboue foure daies since: For they writ vnto me

pórque de Róma me escriuieron, que anía estádo allí dos días espe-rando compañía. Else partió de aquí à los quinze de mayo, y no sé si ha de boluér acá presto. También me da mucha pena el no cyr cosa chica ni grande del; que si por ay pas-sare algúno de la Cór-te, ruego à v. m. le encamine por aquí, para que sepámos si por allí passó, por dónde passá-ron los otros.

As touching these others, *acá*, *allá*, *acullá*, with the prepositions, they be almost alike, sauing that they speake more generally by them then by the former, as if one man meeteth with another, and would demand of him what hee doth in the parts where hee meeteth him; he shall say: *Que háze v. m. por acá?* What make you this way, or in these quarters? And it shall not be so properly said *por aquí*: likewise *por allá estúne el ótro dia, y no vi à v. m.* I was that way the other day, and did not see you.

Likewise.

No sé si haurá pas-sado, por allá mi her-máno: váse á acá por

I know not if my brother haue passed that way: hee goes vp and downe a va-gabond,

allá vagabundo, y el gabond, and the other
otro dia estubo acullá day was there below aboue
abáxo, mas de tres three hours.
horas.

Where it may be seene that *allá* is referred to the person to whom they speake; *allí* may be reduced to a third whereof it is spoken, that is to say, to the place where the person is, but *acullá* shall bee onely vnderstood of the place, without vnderstanding any person, which will be requisite to obserue.

There be certaine Aduerbs of time, which are also taken for Aduerbs of place, as are, *de aquí adelante*, from hence forward, *de ay adelante*, from thence forward.

These Aduerbes *aquende* and *allende* are but selome vsed, by reason of their antiquitie, but in stead of them are taken, *Desta parte*, and *del otra parte*, or *de aquella parte*: *allende* notwithstanding is many times applied to signifie, Besides; as, *Allende desto*, beside this, and is as much as to say, *de mas desto*. They be also Prepositions: for it is found in two ancient booke, *aquende el mar*, on this side of the sea: *allende el río*, on the other side of the riuver.

Aduerbs of Number.

The Aduerbs of Number are nothing but the Nounes numeral, adioyning *vez* to the singular, and *vézes* to the plurall: as,

Vna vez,
Dos vézes,
Tres vézes,
Quátro vézes,

Once, or one time.
Twicc, or two times.
Thrice, or three times.
Foure times.

Fiue

Cinco vézes,
Séys vézes,
Véynte vézes,
Véynte y una vez,
Tréynta vézes,
Quarénta vézes,
Cién vézes,
Mil vézes,
Cién mil vézes,

Fiue times.
Six times.
Twenty times.
One and twenty times.
Thirty times.
Forty times.
A hundred times.
A thousand times.
A hundred thousand times.

And so of all the rest till it come to be infinite, taking as is said, the Numbers, whereof may also bee formed certaine Aduerbs, with adioyning thereto either *vez* or *vézes*, as are *de dos en dos*, *de tres en tres*, *de quátro en quátro*, which be Aduerbs of order, as who should say: *Van de dos en dos*, They goe two and two at a time, three and three, foure and foure: which is vnderstood in forme of going in order; but *Uno à uno*, *dos à dos*, *tres a tres*, *quátro a quátro*, should bee vnderstood as of two contrary and opposite parties the one and the other, as who should say, One against one, two against two, three against three, foure against foure. And *Tántos a tántos*, is as much as to say, As many of one fide as of the other.

Example.

Vámos tres à tres,
ó tántos à tántos à re-
nir, que me conténto
délllo.

Let vs goe fight, three against three, or as many of one part as of the other, for I am content therewith.

And it shall not be well said, *Vámos de dos en dos*, or *de tres en tres*, *de uno en uno*, which are Aduerbs of Order, or at least-wise seruing to order.

Aduerbs

Aduerbs of Quantitie.

Múcho,	Much.
Poco,	Little.
Muy mucho,	Very much.
Muy poco,	Very little.
Un poco, poquito,	A little.
Muy poquito,	A very little.
Afáz, bárto,	Enough, sufficient.
Hárt o poco,	Little enough.
Demasiado,	Too much.
Demas désto,	Besides this, furthermore.
Al pie de ciento,	Well nigh, or neare upon a hundred.
Al pie de mil,	Well nigh a thousand, or about a thousand.
Múcho mas,	Much more.
Poco mas,	Little more.
Demasiadamente,	Excessiuely.
Sin medida,	Vnmeasurably.
Tan quan, & tanto quanto,	So much as.
Abundantemente & abundosamente,	Abundantly.
En abundancia,	In abundance.
A montones,	By heapes.

These Aduerbs, *tanto* and *quanto*, be alwaies ioyned to the Verbe and to the Substantive: but *tan* and *quan*, are put before the Noun Adiectiue or another Aduerbe.

Examples.

Yo tengo tan buenos amigos como vos, y tan buena renta. I haue as good friends as you, and as good rent.

O quan mal lo hazéis
comigo, y quan bien lo he
hecho yo con vos.

Quanto hágo todo es
váno.

Tanto me diréys que lo
creeré.

Tanto quanto me dixer-
des haré.

No tengo tanto dinero
como vos.

In these examples following they bee put before Adiectiues or Particiles, and other Aduerbs, but not before the Verbe: as,

Cantáua tan dulcemente.
Hizolo tan sabiamente y
tan bien, que no podía ser
mejor.

Estan amado, tan fau-
reido, tan querido, y tan
desseádo de todos, que no
áy hombre mas dichoso
que el.

Estan hermosa, tan lín-
da, tan galána, tan virtuó-
sa, tan bien acondicionada,
que tiene pucas cosas que se
le yguálen.

These Aduerbs *mas*, *muy*, and *múcho*, serue with Nounes positives to forme the comparatiues, and then they be Aduerbs of comparition, augmenting the

O how ill you deale
with mee, and how well
I haue dealed with you.

All that I doe is in
vaine.

You will tell mee so
much that I shall beleue
it.

All that you shall tell
me, I will doe.

I haue not so much
money as you.

He did sing so sweetly.

He did it so wisely and
so well, that it could not
be better.

He is so beloued, so fa-
uored, so well willed,
and so desired of all, that
there is no man more
happy then hee.

She is so faire, so pret-
ty, so neatly attired, so
vertuous, so well condi-
tioned, that she hath but
few her equals.

the quality, as *Triste*, *mas triste*, sad, more sad : *bueno*, *muy bueno*, good, very good.

Mucho serueth to the comparatiue and superlatiue, and signifieth sometimes, Too much, when it is ioyned to a Noun Adiectiue : as, *Es mucho grande*. It is too great, for to signifie much (I speake in augmenting the quality) it behoueth to say *muy*, as *Esta dama es muy hermosa*, This Gentlewoman is very faire.

Sometimes moreouer two of the said Aduerbs be ioyned together, the better to expresse a superlatiue, or to double the comparatiue : as, *muy mas grande*, much more great : *Mucho mas triste*, much more sad.

There be some comparatiues irregular; as, *mejor*, *peor*, *mayor*, *menor*, of *bueno*, *malo*, *grande*, *pequeno*, which are positiues.

The superlatiues admit neither Aduerbs, nor any other particles, but follow the Italian forme : notwithstanding they haue three diuers endings, to wit, *ssimo*, *limo*, and *errimo*; as, *Bonissimo*, *santissimo*, *dificilimo*, *similimo*, *acerrimo*, *uberrimo*.

Aduerbs of qualitie.

Bien, *buenamente*,
Mal, *malamente*,
Osadamente,
Atrevidamente,
Hermosamente,
Dulcemente,
Donosamente,
Prudentemente,
Sabiamente,
Fuertemente,

Well.
Ill.
Boldly.
Audaciously.
Beautifully, comely.
Sweetly.
Pleasantly.
Wisely.
Sagely.
Stoutly, courageously.

Elegan-

Elegantemente,
Liberalmente,
Ligeramente,
Dicibosamente,
Gentilmente,
Facilmente,
Difficilmente,
Adrede,
Lindamente,
Pulidamente,
Delicadamente,
Locamente,
Asabiendas,

Elegantly.
Liberally.
Lightly, nimbly.
Happily.
Finely, handsomely.
Easily.
Hardly, difficultly.
On set purpose.
Featly, prettily.
Neatly.
Delicately.
Foolishly.
Wittingly.

And so of many others which end almost all in *mente*, being formed of Nounes: as, *sabiamente de sabio*, *locamente de loco*, &c. to all which may be adioyned the aforesnamed Aduerbe *Muy*, to signifie augmentation of the quality: as, *muy sabiamente*, very wisely, *muy locamente*, very foolishly, &c. It is often found that in ioyning two of these Aduerbs together, the first is depriued of two whole syllables: as, *Sabia y discretamente*, for *Sabiamente y discretamente*, and it is sufficient that the last be entirely expressed.

Aduerbs of Negation.

No, *ni*, *ni aun*,
Aun no, *no aun*,
Ni menos, *tampoco*,
Ni tampoco,
Nada, *nonada*,
Iamás, *nunca*,
Enninguna manera,

No or not, neither, nor yet.
Not as yet.
Neither.
Nor as little, nor neither.
Nothing, nothing at all.
Neuer.
In no waies.

Antes, mas ántes, Nay rather, sooner,
No solamente, Not onely.

The Aduerbe *no*, is alwaies a negatiue, bee it alone or accompanied ; for two negations make not an affirmation, so that *Náda* and *nonáda* signifie one thing : *tam poco* and *ni tam poco* are alike ; *jamás* and *núncajamás*, are all one. *Ménos* is a simple negation which is explicated in English : Neither, and is commonly found in Interrogations. Example: *Tienes dinero? no; y vestidos? ménos; y de comer? ménos.* Hast thou any mony? no; and apparell? neither : and to eat? neither : whereto may also be adioyned the negatiue *ni*, as: *Yo no tengo dineros ni ménos vestidos.* But when the particle *que* commeth after, it is then an Aduerbe comparatiue, and not negatiue : as, *Yo tengo ménos que tu*, I haue lesse then thou. *Nonada* is sometimes separated by interposing a word; as, *No quierenáda*, I will haue nothing; and likewise conioyned: as *Nonáda quíero*; which altereth not the signification.

Aduerbs of Affirmation.

<i>Si,</i>	Yea, yes.
<i>Tambien,</i>	Also.
<i>Sicíerto,</i>	Yes certainly.
<i>Sí por cierto,</i>	Yes for certaine.
<i>Sí de verdad,</i>	Yes in truth.
<i>Por cierto,</i>	For certaine, truly.
<i>Por verdad,</i>	Verily.
<i>Porqué no?</i>	Why not?
<i>Ciertamente,</i>	Certainly.
<i>Así es, sin duda,</i>	It is so, without doubt.
<i>Conviene à sabér,</i>	To wit, that is to say.

Otrosi,

Otrosi,
Ansíes,
Quién duda,
Ausádas,
De véras,

Likewise.
So it is.
Who doubteth it?
Boldly.
In very deede, In good earnest.

This manner of affirming by a negatiue in forme of interrogation is very lusty and liuely, as if one demanded *Vendréys mañana?* It might well be answered, *Porqué no?* Which should be as much as to say, Yes.

To this Aduerbe *de véras*, answereth *de búrlas*, which seemeth not otherwise to be an Aduerbe, not being found amongst the negatiues, although it be the contrary and priuatiue of the other; but to speake more rightly, they be Relatiues opposite and contrary, and then both of them being found together, they there lose the nature of an Aduerbe, as may be seene in this Prouerbe.

De búrlas ni de véras contu señór pártas péras: Neither in iest, nor earnest, doe thou part peares with thy Master. Which is to say, that he ought not to haue any thing to meddle or diuide with his Lord or Master, or other greater then himselfe.

Aduerbs of wishing.

Oxala, an Arabian word, which is applyed to euery Tense of the Optatiue, and signifieth so much as these formes ensuing.

Pléga à Diós, I pray God.
Pluguiéssse à Diós, I would to God.
Pluguiéra à Diós, Idem, and that it had pleased God.
Quiéra à Diós, God grant.

But the said *Oxala*, is put alone without the particle *que*, which the other formes doe require. As touching the vse of these Aduerbs, it hath beeene seene in coniugating the Verbes.

Aduerbs of Admonishing, or Extorting.

<i>Ea, váya,</i>	There then, goeto.
<i>Espués, órapués,</i>	Goe to then.
<i>Orasus,</i>	Idem.
<i>Acábayá,</i>	Dispatch, haue done.
<i>Acabémos yá,</i>	Let vs dispatch, let vs make an end.

Aduerbs of Demonstrating.

<i>He aquí, véys aquí,</i>	See heere, loe here.
<i>Vez allí,</i>	Looke there.
<i>He lo aquí,</i>	Loe here it is.
<i>He lo allí,</i>	Looke there it is.
<i>Catáldo aquí,</i>	See it here.
<i>Catáldo ay,</i>	Behold it there.

Aduerbs of Order.

<i>Primeramente,</i>	First.
<i>Principalmemente,</i>	Principally.
<i>Quánto a lo primero,</i>	As touching the first.
<i>Por adelante, en lo v-</i>	Henceforth.
<i>nidero,</i>	
<i>De aquí adelante,</i>	From hence forward.
<i>De ay adelante,</i>	From thence forward.
<i>De allí adelante,</i>	Idem.
<i>Después deсто,</i>	After this.
<i>Allénde deсто,</i>	Besides this.
<i>De mas deсто,</i>	Furthermore.
<i>De nuevo,</i>	Againe, afresh.

Otra

<i>Otravez,</i>	Another time, againe.
<i>Algúnavez,</i>	Some times.
<i>Avérez,</i>	By times, by fits.
<i>Alfin, finalmén-te,</i>	At the end, finally.
<i>Particularmén-te,</i>	Particularly.
<i>Después, despues acá,</i>	After, after this.
<i>Désque,</i>	Since that.
<i>Alcábo, alfin,</i>	At the end, to conclude.
<i>De ay,</i>	From thence.
<i>Entre tanto,</i>	In the meane time.
<i>Ala póstro,</i>	At the last.
<i>De atrás,</i>	Behinde.
<i>Iten,</i>	Likewise.

Aduerbs of Diminishing.

<i>De espácio,</i>	By leisure, leisurely.
<i>Poco a poco,</i>	By little and little.
<i>Pássio, passito,</i>	Soft and faire.
<i>Quédo, quedito,</i>	Quietly, without making a noise.
<i>Apénas,</i>	Hardly.
<i>Amálas pénas,</i>	Very hardly.
<i>Cási,</i>	Almost.
<i>A plazér,</i>	At pleasure.
<i>Cállacallando,</i>	Secretly, without saying a word.
<i>Callandico,</i>	Very softly, exceeding stilly.

Aduerbs of Doubting.

<i>Quiçá,</i>	Perhaps.
<i>A caso,</i>	By chance, by accident.
<i>Por ventura,</i>	Peraduenture.
<i>Pnede ser,</i>	It may be, like enough.
	<i>Aduerbs</i>
	<i>M 4</i>

Aduerbs of Asking or Demanding.

<i>Paraqué,</i>	To what end?
<i>Porqué? por que razón?</i>	Why? For what reason?
<i>Por que causa?</i>	For what cause?
<i>Cómo? Por que no?</i>	How? Wherefore not.
<i>Que? A que no?</i>	What? Why not?
<i>A que propósito?</i>	To what purpose?

The particle *no* being ioyned with the Interrogation, hath the force of demanding; as, *Tréys mañana, No?* You will goe to morrow, *No? Allá comeré, No?* I will dine there, *No?*

Aduerbs of assembling and gathering together.

<i>Juntamente,</i>	Together.
<i>Ala par,</i>	Side by side.
<i>Alas parejas,</i>	Like for like.
<i>Juntos, en uno,</i>	Together.
<i>Entrámbos, ámbos,</i>	Both.
<i>También,</i>	Also, likewise.
<i>De compañía,</i>	Of a company.
<i>Hermanablemente,</i>	Brotherly.

This Aduerbe *juntos*, admitteth the feminine *juntas*, speaking of feminines: *ámbos* maketh *ámbas*, and *entrámbos*, *entrámbas*, and haue no other difference, sauing that *ámbos*, and *entrámbos*, are spoken of two, as also *entrámbos à dos*, and *entrámbas à dos*; but *juntos*, and *juntas*, may be said of two, and of many.

Aduerbs of Separating.

<i>Apárte,</i>	Apart.
<i>A vncábo,</i>	At one end.

De

<i>Detras,</i>	Behind.
<i>En secreto,</i>	In secret.
<i>Secretamente,</i>	Secretly.
<i>Apartadamente,</i>	Separately.
<i>A escondidas,</i>	Closely, hiddenly, secretly.
<i>A vnaparte,</i>	Of one side.
<i>A húrto,</i>	By stealth.
<i>A hurtadas,</i>	Idem.
<i>A hurtadillas,</i>	Idem.
<i>Sólo, solamente,</i>	Only.
<i>Tan solamente,</i>	Only.
<i>De otra manéra,</i>	After another sort, otherwise.
<i>Fuéra, excepto,</i>	Except, excepted.
<i>No embargante, no ob-</i>	Notwithstanding.
<i>stante,</i>	
<i>Sino,</i>	Unlesse, but.
<i>A escúras,</i>	In the dark.

Tras is also a preposition, and signifieth After, but is vsed simply, as, *Tras su deseo camina cada uno*: Every one trauels after his owne desire: or might well be an Aduerbe of order, hauing *a* or *de* before it; as, *Mira adelante y no caerás atrás*, Looke before thee and thou shalt not fall backward: It is also an Aduerbe of place, but then requireth the particle *de*, as *de tras de mi*, Behind me. *A escondidas de mi*, vna-waresto me.

Aduerbs of Intention or Attention.

<i>De todo en todo,</i>	Wholly.
<i>En todo y por todo,</i>	In all and by all.
<i>De todo,</i>	Utterly, altogether.
<i>En gran manéra,</i>	Greatly.

Grande-

Grandemente,
Enteramente,
Atentamente,

Greatly.
Entirely.
Attentively.

Of Adverbs Comparatives and Superlatives.

Mas, menos,
Mucho, muy,
Muy santamente,
Muy doctamente,
Bonissimamente,
Principalissimamente,
Fortissimamente,

More, less.
Much, very.
Very holily.
Very learnedly.
Most excellently.
Most principally.
Most valiantly, most courageously.

Adverbs Personals.

Comigo,
Contigo,
Consigo,

With me.
With thee.
With him.

Adverbs appellatives.

Ola óla,
O cómo se lláma?
A quien digo?
Ha Señor,
Cece,

Hola ho.
O whats the name ont?
To whom doe I speake?
Ah Sir.
Heare me a word.

Adverbs of Choosing.

Antes, mas ántes,
Primero que,
Mejor,
Mas áyna,

Rather, sooner.
Rather then, before that.
Better.
Rather.

Primero is used thus, Primero me moriré que haga
ésto, I will rather die then doe it. Ayna, is taken also
for

for an Adverb of time, as may be seen in this pro-
verb following,

Da Diós álas a la hormiga, para que se pierda mas
áyna.

God giueth wings to the Ant, that she may perish
the sooner.

Adverbs of Hasting.

Luégo, subito,
En un moménto,
Apríeßa, preſto,

Preſurosamente,
A gran priéſſa,
Arrebatadamente,
En un cerrar de ojos,

Adverbs of Likeness.

Cómo, así como,
Semejantemente,
De la manéra que,
Destamancra,
De aquella manéra,
Ansí,
Cáſi,

As, so as.
In like sort.
In such manner that.
In this sort.
After that fashion.
So.
Almost.

Adverbs irregulars.

There are found some Adverbs Irregular, which
are,

De camino, de passada,
Altravés,
Alrevers,
A reculás,

By the way.
Acroſſe, ouerthwart.
Quite contrary, backward.
Arſeward.

De

De quândo en quândo,	Now and then, from time to time.
De brûces,	With the face downward.
Agâtas,	On all four, as a dog or cat.
A tiénto,	By gheſſe, at randome.
A tuérto,	Wrongfully.
Embâlde, debâlde,	In vaine, Gratis, and for nothing.
A truéque, en lugár,	In change, In stead of.
Andâr en cuéros,	To goe naked.
Andâr en púras cárnes,	Idem.
Andâr en cuérpo,	To goe in hose and doublet, without a cloake.
Ofrecér à algúno las án- cas.	To offer one to ride behind him.
Yr a cauállo en cérro,	To ride bare ridged.
Hablár de oydas,	To speake by hearesay.
Comér pan en exútas, or a fécas,	To eat drie bread.
Eſtár en ayúnas,	To be fasting.
Boluér a vazías,	To returne empty.
Matár a mordidas,	To kill with biting.
Passár a nádo,	To swim ouer.

To the Aduerbe *renéſ*, anſwereth *derecho*, which ſignifieth, Right. Example: *El ſáyo eſtá del renéſ, boluéndlo del derecho*; The coat is the inside outward, turne it right. *Todo quânto auéys dicho, es al renéſ*, All that you haue ſaid is cleane contrary. Likewise, *Vos ſoys al renéſ de los otros*, You are contrary from the rest. *De brûces*, is uſed commonly with the Verbe *Echárſe*: as, *Echárſe de brûces*, To cast himſelfe or lie downe on his belly with his face towards the ground: *beuér de brûces*, To drinke at a fountaine lying

lying on the ſtomach; *caér de brûces*, to fall with ones face againſt the earth. *Caér de colodrillo*, is put for the contrary; which is to ſay, to tumble backward, for *colodrillo* ſignifieth the hinder part of the head.

These two Aduerbs *embálde* and *debálde*, are ver- ry diſſerent in ſignification, for *embálde* ſignifieth in vaine, and to no end: as for Example: *Embálde os trabajáys*, You labour in vaine, or you loſe your la- bour; but *debálde* ſignifieth Gratis, without recompence: as, *Yo hiz: éſto debálde*, I did that for thankes, without recompence, for nothing. It may ſome- times alſo ſignifie good cheape, but there is a word more proper, which is *baráto*.

These two others, *atruéque* and *en lugár*, haue al- most one ſignification, and require an Ablatiue caſe after them: as, *Atruéque*, or, *En lugár de vueſtro cauállo*, *Yo os daré el mío*; In change, or in ſtead of your horse I will giue you mine.

Of the Prepoſitions.

IT will be ſufficient to put downe all the Prepoſi- tions with their ſignifications, to know the uſe of them, for ſo much as they be not conſtruēd as in La- tine, for ſome ſerue indifferently to the Accuſatiue & to the Ablatiue, and ſome others to the datiuē, which ſhall be knowne by the Article *de* or *a*, adioyned vñ- to them, but let vs come firſt to thoſe ſeruing to the Ablatiue.

<i>De</i> ,	Of.
<i>Cércas</i> ,	Neere.
<i>Decércas</i> ,	At hand.
<i>Antes</i> ,	Before.

Acérca,
Désta parte,
A ésta parte,
Déste cábó,
En derredór,
Al derredór,
Entórno,
Fuéra,
Déntro,
Debáxo,
Encima,
Ayúso, de yúso, abáxo,
Arriba,
De fúso,
De trás,
Empos del,
*Cérra de mi, En in
podér y señorío,*
Por amór de mi,
Despúes,
A escondidas de mi,

En frénte, de frénte,
Ala orilla,
A rayz de la paréd,
Riberas,

Touching, concerning.
 From this time or part.
 To this time, or part.
 Of this end.
 Round about.
 Idem.
 About.
 Without.
 Within.
 Vnder.
 Vpon.
 Below, beneath.
 Aboue.
 Idem.
 Behind.
 After him.
 Neere about me, that is, In
my power.
 For my sake, for my cause.
 After.
 Vnknowne, or vnawares to
me.
 Ouer against, opposite.
 Along by the shore.
 A long by the wall.
 At the shore, or banke.

All which doe require the particle *de*; as, *Cérra de mi*, Neere about me: *Acérca déste negocio*, Concerning this affaire: *Déstapárte de dos años*, or *de dos años, a ésta parte*. Since this time two yeares: *Enderredór del muro*, Round about the wall: *En derredór* is also found without a case, but it is then vnderstood: as, *Estána todo en derredór cercado de piédra*, It

It was compassed quite round about with stone. *Entórno* serueth to the Datue; as, *Entórno à la cápa*, Round about the cloake: *Fuéra*, is found with a case, and without; as, *fuéra de la tierra*, out of the countray; and, *Es ydo fuéra*, He is gone forth; but this last is rather an Aduerbe of Place. *Arriba*, is found alwaies without a case, by reason that it ought not to be a Preposition, but an Aduerbe.

I haue put this particle *de* in the first place, which is so common amongst the Spaniards, that it is found before all Infinitive Moods, after these Verbs, *Déne, tiéne, ha, as, Déne de ser assi; déne de dezir, verdád; Tiéne de hazér, Ha de llamar, Haurá de llorár*, and an infinite company more.

Prepositions seruing to the Accusative case.

Sobre, acuéstas,
Ante, contra,
Aquénde, allénde,
Por, pára,
Sáluo, excépto,
Sacándo fuéra,
Ségun,
Iñunto,
Hásta, fin,
Con, en,
Entre, házia,
Cábe, tras,

Vpon or aboue, vpon him.
Before, against.
On this side, beyond.
For and by, For.
Sauing, except.
Out setting.
According, according as.
Close by, neere vnto.
Vntill or so farre as, without.
With, in or into.
Betweene or amongst, towards.
Neere, after.

This Preposition *acuéstas*, which is in Italian *adosso*, signifieth, vpon the person in what place soeuer it be; vpon the head, vpon the backe, vpon the shoulders, or elsewhere. Example. *Sí creyéra à Celestina*

stina con sus seis dozenas de años acuéstas, &c. If I had beleeued Celestine with her six dozen of yeares ouer her head. Another Example: *Al passar del río tomé le acuéstas y le llevé à la otra parte*, At the passing of the riuier I tooke him vpon my shoulders, or vpon my backe, and caried him to the other side. Likewise, *To no tengo dineros acuéstas*, I haue no money about me, for it would not be good English to say vpon me.

There is yet found an *acuéstas*, in another signification, but it is not a Preposition, and it ought to be written thus distinguished, *acuéstas*, for it is as much as *a costa*, which is to say, at the cost or charges: and it is construed with these three Pronounes, *mis, tus, sus*, interposing them betweene *a* and *cuéstas*, as, *A mis cuéstas, a tus cuéstas, a sus cuéstas*; At my cost, at thy cost, at his cost: but it is better said, *a mi costa*: The same may be vsed without these Pronounes, hauing a Noun expreſſed; as, *a cuéstas de Pédro N.* At the charges of Peter N. Yet I finde *a costa de Pédro N.* to be farre the better.

Ante and *antes*, are different, in that *ante* signifieth *coram* in Latine, that is to say, In presence, and before the person; which signification denoteth neither time nor place: and *antes* is as much as the Latine *ante*, and signifieth before, denoting the time and place; but being put without a case, it loseth the nature of a Preposition, and is made an Aduerbe, signifying in English, Rather, and in Latine, *imò* or *potius*.

Contra, doth sometimes signifie, opposite, or ouer against, but it is better said *En frénte* or *de frénte*, which are Prepositions of the Ablatiue case.

Aquende el mär, On this side the sea, *Allende el río*, Beyond the Riuier.

Por

por and *pára*, both which in Italian signifie *per*, are different in Latine, Spanish, French, and also in English; for *por*, is as much as the Latine Prepositions, *per* and *propter*: and *pára* hath the force of *pro* and *ad*. The first, which is *por*, signifieth the efficient cause, and also the finall. Example of the efficient: *Lo que por mi personz yo no pudiere acabár*, That which I shall not be able to effect by my owne person, I will endeavour to performe it by meanes of another. Example of the finall: *Por mi se ha hécho quistión*, There was a quarrell made for my sake: *Han venido por mi*, They haue come for me: *Voy por vino y por agua*, I goe for wine and for water: *Por amor de Diós*, For Gods sake, or for the loue of God. *Yo muéro por ti*; I die for thee. In these Examples it is seene that *por* signifieth as well For as By, the said For being a Preposition of the finall cause, which is in Latine *propter*: and By, of the efficient cause, being said in Latine *per*. It hath moreover sometimes the force of To, in English: as, *Aun está por nascér quien lo haga*, He that shall doe it, is yet to be borne: *Aun está por hazér*, It is yet to doe. *Pára* either signifieth profit or damage to the person: as, *Pára quien es ésto?* For whom is this? *Es pára mí*; It is for me: *El dano será pára mí*, The losse or damage shall be for me, and the profit for thee.

Paraque and *porque*, compounded of these two and of *que*, are Aduerbs and Coniunctions, where it is spoken of their significations.

These three, *sáluo*, *excépto*, *sacando fuéra*, are Exceptiues. *Ségun*, is a Preposition and an Aduerbe, hauing the same signification in the one, as in the other. Example: *Ségun dice Aristóteles*, According as

N

as Aristotle saith: *Según su parecer*, According to his opinion. *junto*, is put also before the Dative: as, *junto a mí, junto a ti*, Hard by mee, close by thee.

Hasta, is thus vsed: *Hasta la casa*, As farre as the house; *hasta mañana*, Till to morrow. I haue sometimes read *hasta*, hauing the signification of *de aquí or de allí*, as, *hasta seis días salió toda la gente de guerra que se anía detenido en las guarniciones*, Six daies after all the men of w^re went forth that had remained in the Garrisons.

Con, signifieth With, and is compounded with the Pronoues, *mi, ti, si*, taking away *n* (for the most part) in the composition of the first, and adioyning *go*, to all three, whereof are formed, *comigo, contigo, consigo*, with me, with thee, with him, or with it. The said Preposition *con*, hauing *pára* before it, altereth his signification, and both together are as much as *Erga* in Latine: as, *Se ámos piadosos pára con los pobres*, Let vs be pittifull towards the poore, or in the behalfe of the poore: So likewise, *Pára contigo*, towards me, *Pára consigo*, towards thee, *Pára contigo*, towards him, or in his behalfe: *Pára contodos es liberal y franco*, He is liberall and fräncke towards all.

Hacia, which is sometimes written *hacia*, signifieth Towards: as, *hacia casa*, towards home; *hacia el Oriente*, towards the East, or Orient: but it is to be pronounced with the accent vpon the first syllable, to make a difference from *hazia*, the first and third person Imperfect of the Indicatiue Mood of the Verbe *hazér*, which is accented vpon the penultima.

Tras signifieth After, as, *Tras los días viene el seso*, wit or vnderstanding comes after many daies. *Tras su deseo, camina cada uno*, Euery man trauels after his owne desire. I remember that I haue read, *Tras la lláne*,

lláne, to say as we doe in English, vnder locke and key, but this is a propriety of the Language. *Cábe Neere*, or close by; *Siénte se cábe mi*, Sit you close by me.

Of the Coniunctions.

Of Coniunctions there be some that both binde the words and their signification, and they are called Copulatiues: Others are disiunctives, separating the sense, and conioyning onely the words: Others also be called Casuals or Conditionals, declaring the causes of the things: yet others Rationals, which some doe name Collectiues: and finally Adversatiues, by which is demonstrated that what we say can neither hurt nor hinder.

The Copulatiues are,

Y or è,
Tambien, aun,

And.
Also, yet.

Many times *tambien* and *aun* are compounded with the first, *Y*, for the greater affirmation: as, *Yo bice ésto, Y tambien effótro*, I did this and also that. *Yo te daré ésto, Y aun mas*, I will giue thee this, and yet more.

I haue found a certaine difference betweene *tambien* and *aun*, which is, that *tambien* regardeth the agent or efficient: and *aun* is referred to the patient or materiall, but this shall be only for the studious, without giuing any examples hereof.

The Disjunctives.

<i>Ni</i> ; <i>o</i> ,	Neither, nor ; either, or.
<i>Ni el uno, ni el otro,</i>	Neither the one, nor the other.
<i>O ésto, ó eſſótro,</i>	Either this, or that.

The Casuals or Conditionals.

<i>Si</i> ; <i>aunque</i> ,	If ; although.
<i>Dádoque, puésto que,</i>	Albeit, say that.
<i>Puéstocáſo que,</i>	Put case that.
<i>Pués que, pára que, como si,</i>	Seeing that, to the end that, as if.
<i>Por que, que,</i>	Because, for.
<i>Mas, mas si,</i>	But, but if.
<i>Pero, ántes,</i>	But, rather.
<i>Si que, or Se que,</i>	It is well knowne.
<i>Desſués que, Yá que,</i>	After that, seeing that.
<i>Por lo qual, porénde,</i>	By which, therefore.
<i>Por la qualcósá,</i>	For the which thing.
<i>Contalque,</i>	So that, conditionally that.
<i>Concondición que,</i>	With condition that.
<i>Empéro,</i>	Notwithstanding.
<i>Todavía,</i>	Notwithstanding, neuertheleſſe.
<i>A lo ménos, si quicra,</i>	At the least, at leaſtwiſe.
<i>De ótra manéra,</i>	Otherwise.

Amongſt these Conditionals are inserted the Aduerſatiues, which be,

Aunque, dádoque, puésto que, puéstocáſo que, all which doe ſignifie alike ; and moreouer *empéro* and *todavía*. These three *mas, pero, ántes*, are Aduerſatiues or Exceptiues. *Si*, is properly a Conditionall, not being an Affirmatiue. *Cómo*, is often uſed with *ſi*,

ſi, in this manner : *Cómo ſi fuéra el Rey, anſí mandáhu à los otros* ; As if he had beene King, ſo he commanded the rest : *Cómo ſi no tuuiéſſe que hazér*, As if he had nothing to doe. *Porque* is as well an Interrogatiue, as a Confirmatiue or Casuall, and ſignifieth as in Latine, *Quare* and *quia*, in English, wherefore and because.

Con tal que, con condición que, and con tal condición que, haue but one ſignification : as, *Yo haré eſſo con talque vos hagáys lo que os he dicho*, I will doe that, prouided that you doe what I haue told you. *Con condición que me eſperéys Yo yré*, vpon condition that you stay for me I will goe.

A lo ménos and ſi quiera, doe ſignifie both one thing : as, *Pues auémos gastaſo la harina, démos à Dió ſi quiera los salvaſos*, Seeing we haue ſpent the meale, let vs giue to God at leaſtwiſe the brannc. *Dád me a lo ménos*, Giue me at the leaſtwiſe.

The Rationals.

<i>Anſí que, pórque,</i>	So that, because or for that.
<i>Porque a la verdád,</i>	For to ſpeake the truth.
<i>Cíerto, es à ſabér,</i>	Truly, to wit.
<i>Conuiéne à ſabér,</i>	To wit, that is to ſay.
<i>Luégo, pués,</i>	Then, or therefore.
<i>Por eſſo, por tanto,</i>	For that, therefore.

These two *Luégo* and *Pués*, in this ſignification, are both Englished Then, and ſometimes Therefore : for *Luégo*, in another ſense, ſignifieth Presently ; and is then an Aduerbe of time. *Pués* in another nature is taken for Seeing, or Seeing that : and in the beginning of a Period, or whatſoeuer discourse,

it signifieth, Now : as, *Estána pués róda la gente de guerra à punto para pelear*; Now all the men of war stood in readinesse to fight: And note that although *Pués* be the first, second, or third word of the period, it retaineth this signification.

Of the Interiections.

Interiections are a kinde of words, that expresse an alteration of the minde or spirit, according to the accidents that happen to the person, signifying Ioy or pleasure, Griefe, Feare, Indignation, or Admiracion: as,

<i>O bueno, hala hala ;</i>	Oh good, oh that's gallant.
<i>hala gála,</i>	
<i>Ay or háy ; Ay de mi,</i>	Alas ; alas for me.
<i>Guáy, guáy de mi,</i>	Ah, woe is me.
<i>O desdichado de mi,</i>	O vnfortunate man that I am.
<i>Amárgo de mi,</i>	Griued man that I am.
<i>Cuygado de mi,</i>	Wretched man that I am.

Hax and *box*, are two Interiections, the first wherof is vsed when one feeleth any smarting paine, being sometimes adioyned to other words: as, *Ax que me quémá*, Ah it scaldeth me. *Ox*, is vsed when we wil not haue any thing ; as, *Oxe à fuéra*, that is to say, Away with that; Ile doe nothing with it : and it also serueth to driue away poultry and birds, redoubling the word *Oxe oxe*: It is vsed moreouer for the chasing of Coneyes or Rabbets, whereof is formed the Noun *Oxeo de áues*, or *de Conejos*, and the Verbe *Oxeár áues, oxeár Conejos*, which is to driue away with crying Shue, shue.

Iesús

Iesús, vála me Diós, Iesús, God helpe me.
Diós me libre, God deliuer me.

An end of the parts of speech.

Hauing generally spoken of the parts of speech, and in my opinion sufficiently giuen to vnderstand the significations of the same, I haue not thought it from the purpose to annex a briefe collection and obseruation, as well of words simple, which haue diuers significations, as of certaine formes of speaking, proper and particular to the Spanish tongue, which would be difficult to be vnderstood.

It is requisite then first of all to speake of the words simple, as of *ay* the Aduerbe, and *áy* the Verbe, which should be written *háy* to know their difference the better. Yet since it consisteth not in writing, but only in pronunciation, it behoueth to note that *ay* the Aduerbe is to be exprest with the accent vpon the *y*, making it to be very much sounded, as a dissyllabe, and hauing a short and separated from it. But *áy* or *háy* the Verbe, shall bee pronounced with the accent vpon *a* or *ha*, sounding the finall *y* but little, as if it were but a monosyllable. The first which is an Aduerbe of place, signifieth in English, There : and the other that commeth from the Verbe *hauér*, signifieth There is, and There are.

Example of the First.

Quién estás ay? Who is there ?
Áy estás mi hermano ; My brother is there ;
N 4

Of

Of the Second.

Que áy de nuéuo?Que háy de comér?No áy náda que dezir,No áy que hazér,

What newes is there?

What is there to eat?

There is nothing to say.

There is nothing to doe.

And the said *áy* is coniugated almost thorowout all the Moods and Tenses, but only in the third person of the singular, being properly a Verbe Personall, which signifieth in Latine *est* or *sunt*, for it is construed with the singular and plurall number: as, *No áy mas de vn hombre*; There is but one man. *Mas áy de quátro*, There are aboue foure: And it is thus declined.

Ay,
Auia, iuuo,
*Ha auido,**Auia auido,*
*Aurá,**Aya,**Plega a Dios, Aunque,**Aya,**Oxala, Aunque,**Vuiésse, vuiéra,**Oxala, Aunque,**Aya auido,**Oxala, Aunque,**Vuiéra,**Vuiésse & Vuiéra auido,**Auria,*

There is, there are.
There was, there were.
There hath bin, there haue
beene.
There had beene.
There shall or will be.

Let there be.

God grant, Although,
There be.
Would to God, Although,
There were.
I pray God, Although,
There haue beene.
Would to God, Although,
There had beene.
There had beene, there
would or should haue bin.
There should be.

*Quando**Quando Vuiére,**Si Vuiére,**Vuiére auido,**Hauér, ha de auér,**Aurá de auér,*

When there shall or will be.

If there be.

There shall haue beene.

To be, there ought to be.

It shall or will be requisite
that there be.

Likewise for the Imperfet, *Auia de auér*, There did ought to be &c. taking onely the third person of euery Tense, with the said Infinitive Mood.

This variation or declining is only the third person of *Hauér*, as may be seene, excepting the Present of the Indicatiue, *áy*, which admitteth not *ha*: Notwithstanding when one will denote a space of time, be it by interrogation or otherwise, it behoueth to vse the said *ha*, and not *áy*. Example: *Quánto ha que vino el Señor?* How long is it since my Lord came? *Días ha*, many daies agoe: where it behoueth to vnderstand *Tiempo*, as who should say, *Quánto tiempo ha?* How long is it agoe? *Días años ha?* It is ten ycares agone.

There is moreouer found a third *áy* or *háy*, which is an Interiection of Sorrow; but it ought to be pronounced with a greater aspiration then that of the Verbe, sounding the *ha* very clearely.

The particle *des*, which is a Preposition inseparable, is only found in composition, not signifying any thing simple, and serueth to declare the default, contrariety, or priuation of the thing: as, *Deshonra*, dis-honour; *desdicha*, mishap: *desuertura*, misfortune: *deshecho*, vndone; *desarmado*, vnarmed; *desatinado*, Brain-sicke; *desuergonçado*, Shamelesse; and others of the like composition, where it is seene that *des*, is a priuatiue of the thing signified by the Noun that is adioyned vnto it.

S be-

S before *r* is lost, and the said *r* doubled, as in *Derramár, derretir, derribár, derrocár, &c.*

It commeth here fit vnto the purpose to say that oftentimes the *s* which is found before *r*, (be it in one word onely or the said *s* being the finall, before another that beginneth with *r*) suffereth the same change in pronunciation, but not in writing, as may be seene in these words: *Israél, los réyes, los rebéldes, las raméras, las rayzes,* and other the like; which ought to be pronounced as being written, *Isracl, lorreyes, lorrebéldes, laraméras, larrayzes.*

Re is also a Preposition inseparable of the same nature of *des*, but contrary in signification, for it augmenteth and doubleth the thing: as, *Hazér, rehazér, To doe, to doe againe: Yo la he mirádo, y aun remirádo, I haue beheld her, and beheld her againe.*

Of the word *Hidepúta*.

The Spaniards haue a certaine exclamation or Interiection of admiring, to wit, *Hideputa*, which is vsed in comparisons to mocke or deride some person, declaring them not to be such as they ought: as, *O hidepúta, y que Roldán pára hazér fieros? O* what a Roland to make brauadoes, or boast? *O hidepúta y que Nembróth, que mágno Alexándre?* O what a Nembroth, what a great Alexander? this example is taken out of *Celestines*. *O hidepúta y que hombre éres? O* what a man thou art? *O hidepúta y que consejero nos es venido?* O what a counsellor is come vnto vs? And so many other examples of this sort. But when this word is spoken in choler and by iniury, it signifieth as much as *Hijo de puta*, being abridged by Syncope, as may bee seene in the word *Hia.ílgas*, which

which maketh (being put at large) *Hijo dálgo*, and so is *hidepúta* said for *hijo de puta*. It is found in composition with this Verbe Imperatiue *andád*, which may fitly be applied to iniuries with the Preposition *pára*, as, *Andád pára hidepúta*; Get thee gone for the sonne of a whore: *Andád pára velláco, ruín, pérro, móro, Iudío, ladrón, heréje, púto*: Get thee gone for a villaine as thou art, a lewd creature, dog, Moore, Jew, theefe, heretike, buggerer. *Hidepúta ruín, vngnatiuous whores sonne, or sonne of a whore: Hideruín, is said for hijo de ruín.*

Of the word *Hidálgo*.

I haue already giuen some light of the word *Hidálgo*, which is as I haue said abridged from *hijo dálgo*, the Feminine whereof *hidálga*, I haue neither read nor heard spoken, but *Hija dálgo*.

The first which is *Hidálgo*, or *hijo dálgo*, signifieth a Gentleman; and *hija dálgo*, a Gentlewoman: From them is deriued *hidalgia*, which signifieth Nobilitie.

The Etymologie of *hidálgo* or *hijo dálgo*, is amply declared in *Examen de los ingenios*, where the studious may see it at their pleasure; yet because the booke by reason of his scarcenesse, is not in all places to be had, I will speake thereof a little by the way. It behoueth to know that he maketh a comparison of the word *álg*, whereof the diction is compounded, and of his contrary which is *náda*, the first signifying in Latine *aliquid*, and in English, something, the other *nihil*, nothing. Now he referreth the said *náda* to the fault or vice, which is rightly said, nothing. And by *álg*, he understandeth the vertue; being willing to

to inferre that *bijo d'algo*, signifieth sonne of vertue, or of vertuous workes, for I cannot well say in English, Sonne of something, although the Spanish doe so signific.

It will yet be requisite to say concerning this word *merced*, that the Spaniards doe not alwaies reply it either in speaking or writing, but doe put the Relatiue for the same, as to say, *V. M. me hágá merced deſto*, they will speake thus; *V. M. me la hágá deſto*: In ſuch ſert that the Article *la* Relatiue, is as much as *merced*. They will ſay moreouer, *La de v. m. recibí*, whereto muſt be vnderſtood *carta*, to ſignifie, I receiued your letter: And in ſaluting one that ſhall ſay, *Beso las má̄nos de v. m.* they will anſwer, *é y o las de v. m.* Notwithſtanding if two vnequall in quality doe chance to meet, the leſſer hauing ſaid to the greater, *Beso las má̄nos de v. m.* the greater shall not anſwer him, *é y o las de v. m.* but ſhall ſay, *Servidór de v. m.* in caſe the inequality be not very great betweene them: for otherwiſe it ſhould not be fitting for the greater to abafe himſelfe ſo much, but ſhould ſay according to the quality of his inferiour, *Buena róche ſéngá*, or *bien verido séa el Señor Fuláno*, or elſe, *V. M. séa bien venido*: And contrariwiſe it ſhould not be fitting for the meaneſter to ſay to his ſuperiour, *Servidór de v. m.* or *de v. Señoría*, for that *beso las má̄nos*, is more huimble.

I haue ſaid *v. m. séa bien venido*, not *venida*, as ſome not well experienced in the language doe ſay, thinking that the Adiectiue ought to agree with *v. merced*, but I aduertife them, that it muſt alwaies accord with the gender of the person to whom they write or ſpeake, for if it be to a man, it behoueth to ſpeake it in the Masculine Gender: as *V. M. d. V.*

Sa.

Sa. V. Ex. V. Al. V. Magd. V. Santd. séa bien venido. But if it be to a woman, it ſhall be requisite to take the Feminine, and ſay, *bien venida*. And if it happen that they ſpeake to two persons of a diſſerent ſexe, the Masculine ſhall beare it, and they ſhall ſay, *Vnēſtras mercedes ſéan bien venidas*, and not *venidas*. And in like caſe if they ſpecifie both the Genders, the Maſculine ſhall be preferred: as, *Fuláno tiéne un escláno y una escláua muy buénos*.

Some might here ground a ſcrupule concerning that which I haue ſaid, that the Adiectiue accordeth with the Gender of the person, thinking that *Vnēſtro* and *Vnēſtra* ſhould be comprehended vnder this rule, as being Adiectiues: but to take away the diſſiculty hereof, I will ſay that this ought not to be vnderſtood but of the Adiectiue which commeth after: for *vñéſtro* or *vñéſtra*, ſhall ſtill agree with the word adioyned, without hauing regard to the person, for it ſhall not be ſaid *vñéſtro merced*, but *vñéſtra merced*, and in the plurall as well to men as women, they ſhall ſay *vñéſtras mercedes*, that is, to men, *vñéſtras mercedes ſon buénos*, and to women, *vñéſtras mercedes ſon buénas*.

Of the Compariſons proper to the Spanish Tongue.

It muſt not be forgotten to ſay, that in this language there be often uſed compariſons, and in diuers manner, to wit in demonstrating, asking the queſtion, affirming, and denying, whereof I will put downe a certayne quantity of examples, the greater part of them being taken out of *Miranda's Grammar*, to which I will adioyne the English.

And

And first in Demonstrating and affirming: as,

Es mas blanco que la nieve,

Es mas negro que la pez,

Es mas pegajoso que la uadura,

Es mas amargo que la bicel,

Es mas dulce que la miel,

Es mas duro que una piedra,

Es mas bravo que un Leon,

Es mas manso que una oueja,

Es mas fuzio que un puercos,

It is more white, or whiter then snow.

It is blacker then pitch.

It is more clammy then leauen.

It is more bitter then gall.

It is sweeter then hony.

It is harder then a stone.

It is, or he is fiercer then a Lion.

It is, or he is more gentle then a sheepe.

It is, or he is fouler then a hogge.

By forme of Interrogation.

Torna en ti, que hariamas un falso de juicio?

Que hariamas un hombre idiota, un loco?

Que mayor locura pude auer en el mundo?

Que haria mas un falso de experientia y de todo consejo?

Returne to thy selfe, what should a man doe more that were depriued of iudgement?

What should an Idiot doe more, a foole?

What greater folly can there be in the world?

What should one doe more, that wanteth experience and all counsell?

Que

Que haria mas uno que uniese nacido entre las bestias fieras?

Que haria mas un Ciceron? Un Virgilio? Un Aristoteles?

Que haria mas el mayor letrado del mundo?

De donde mas ser me puede venir en el mundo que deste vuestro fauor?

De donde mas fama? mas prosperidad? mas riqueza?

De donde mas bien? mas salud, mas honrra, mas grauedad, mayor bienauenturanca?

Hay en el mundo mas desdichado hombre que yo? no por cierto.

Ay mas affligido hombre que yo?

Hay hombre que mas le pese de vivir? no cierto.

Ay hombre mas dichoso ni mas bien auenturado? cierto no.

And so of diuers other sorts of comparisons that may be made in forme of interrogations.

There

What should one doe more, that had been borne amongst sauage beasts?

What should a Cicero doe more? a Virgil? an Aristotle?

What should the greatest scholler of the world doe more?

From whence can there greater aduancemēt come vnto me in the world then from this your fauour?

From whence more renoune? more prosperity? greater riches?

From whence more good? more health, more honour, more grauitie, greater felicitie?

Is there in the world a more vnhappy man then I? no certaintly.

Is there a more afflicted man then I am?

Is there a man more weary of his life? surely no.

Is there a man more happy, or more fortunate? certainly no.

There is yet an infinite company of others like these that follow.

Vengo tan cargado de buenas nuéñas, como el a beja viéne a la colmeña en tiempo de mucha flór.

Vengo tan contento como Roldán en ganar su espáda.

Huelgo tanto de ver-te como si huuiéra dos años que no te huuiéra visto.

Es como una niue.

Es como hecho de perlas.

Es como el pérro del hortolano, que no come las vérças, ni las déxa comér a otros.

Es como unto de móna, que no es bueno para nadá.

Es como gallina que escarniendo halla el cuchillo con que la deguélle.

Es como el conejo, que buyéndo del pérro, cayó en el lázoo.

I come as well loaden with good newes, as the Bee commeth to the huie in such time as there is store of flowers.

I come as well content as Roland in winning his sword.

I am as glad to see thee, as if I had not seene thee these two yeares.

She is like snow, or as white as snow.

It is made as it were of pearles.

He is like the Gardiners dog, that neither eateth the coleworts, nor suffreth them to be eaten of others.

It is like the fat of a Monkie, which is good for nothing.

He is like the Hen that scraping findesth the knife with which they doe behead her.

Hee is like the Cony that flying from the dog, fell into the snare.

To signifie things impossible and to no purpose, it shall be said.

Es como dar con el púno en el ciélo,

Es como echar lánças en la már,

Es como dar bózes al desierto,

Es como cogér agua en césto,

Es como andár á caca fin pérro.

Es como querér bolár fin alas,

It is as one should strike against heauen.

It is as to cast lances into the sea.

It is like as to cry out in a desert.

It is as to carry water in a basket.

It is as to goe a hunting without a dogge.

It is as to bee willing to fly without wings.

Examples with the Negative.

No holgó tanto Antípatro con las salúdes escritas en la carta del grande Alexándro quanto yo me holgué con la tuyá; ni tan gráta fué al Senado la Solércia del niño Papirio, quanto a mis ojos es tu sobráda hermosura y grácia.

O que gran mercé! por cierto la que hizo el grande Alexándro al Atheniense Phocion, ni la que hizo Catón á los ciudadanos de Utica, no

Antipater was not so much reioyced with the salutes that Alexander the great sent him in his letter, as I was of receiuing thine; nor was the subtlety of the boy Papirius so pleasing to the Senate, as is unto my eies thy excessiue beauty, and grace.

O how great a fauour! certainly that which Alexander the great shewed to Phocion the Athenian, nor that which Cato did to the Cittizens of Utica, can

se yguálan con hárta any wise correspond with
párte à la que tu me has that which thou hast done
hecho.

I might here put downe many other examples, but by reason they doe not make much for the Grammar, being rather parts of Rhetoricke, I will leaue them to returne to the particularities of words.

Of *Acabár*.

Acabár, doth properly signifie to atchieue, finishe, and come to the end of a thing. *No puédo acabár conigo*, I cannot get or obtaine of my selfe. The Spaniards vse *acabár*, to make the person cease or be quiet, that doth something at which they are offended: as, *Acábe v. m. por su vida*; Let it alone, or be quiet I pray you: *Ea por amór de Díos acábe*, Nay for Gods sake, or for the loue of God let it alone. *Acábe, no me digá mas*; Leaue, say no more to me. *Acábe que éres nécio*; Haue done, for thou art a foole: but it should be pronounced with disdaine to give it the greater grace. Looke amongst the Aduerbs of Admonishing.

Of the Verbe *Alcançár*.

This Verbe *Alcançár*, besides diuers significations, as, to get, to obtaine, to reach vnto, to attaine, it hath yet another very different, *Alcançár en la cuénta*, To abate of the account or reckoning: *Alcançando de cuénta*, Yeelding ones selfe debtor for the residue of some payment.

It signifieth as well to pursue as to attaine; as, *Alcançár lo que huye*, To attaine or ouertake that which flyeth, and, *Alcançár los enemigos*, To pursue the enemis:

enemies: *Tra al alcánc de los enemigos*, He went to the pursuit of the enemies.

Of the Verbe *Alçár*.

Alçár, signifieth properly to lift vp, to heave, to erect, but in composition it hath other different significations, as may be seene by these examples. *Alçár se con el Réyno*, To reuolt, and make the kingdome reuolt by little and little; it is vnderstood of a Gouvernour of a Prouince, and the same may bee said of all kinde of gouernment. *Alçár se a su mano*, To vnsay some promise that was made, and to reuoke it. *Alçár se con tóda su haziénda*, To be packing with all his goods, and to goe from one countrey to another; properly to play Banckrupt. *Alçár el destíerro*, To reuoke or recall the banishment.

Of the Verbe *Allegár*.

Allegár, is in English, To assemble, to heape vp, to approach, to arriue, to condescend, to consent, and to come. *Allegár se mucha génte*, Great store of people to be assembled. *Allegár muchos dinéros*, To heape vp a great deale of money: *Allegár se al fuégo*, To approach or come neere the fire. *Allegár o arribár al puérto*, To arriue at the Port. *Allegár se à la razaón*, To come to the reason, to consent and condescend thereto.

Of the Verbe *Andár*.

For *Andár*, see at the end of his declining with the Verbe *Yr*, where is spoken both of the one and of the other, yet notwithstanding wee will hereafter speake something of the said *y'rs*.

Of the Verbe *Armár*.

Armár, signifieth, To armie, to bend, to set vp, to prepare: as, *Armár una celáda*, To prepare an ambush: *Armár una ballésta*, To bend a Croslebow: *Armár una cámara*, To set vp a bed. *El armazón de la cámara*, The bedsted.

Aperrocháda.

Aperrockáda, which deriued of *Parróchia*, should signifie *Parrochiána*, a Parishionesse: But I haue read it in *Celestine*, where it hath the proper signification of a woman that hath many buyers, or customers.

Ayúso and Abáxo.

Ayúso, is as much as to say, *después*, After, and next vnto: as, *De Diós en ayúso yo le híze hombre*; After, or next vnto God I made him a man. *Abáxo*, seemeth to haue the same signification: as, *Del Rey abáxo*, After the king: *Mánda me poner las manos del Rey abáxo, que yo lo haré por tu servicio*, Command me to encounter with any man vnder the King, for I will doe it for thy seruice.

Of *Boluér*.

Boluér, signifieth to turne, to returne or come backe, to become, to restore. Examples of all these significations. *Al enemigo que buélue la espálda la puente de pláta*; To the enemie that turneth his backe, it behoueth him to make a bridge of siluer. *No kuye el que buélue à su cásfa*, He doth not fly that returneth to his house. *El se ha buélto lóco por amóres*, He is become foolish for loue. *Buélue, mo mi dinéro*, Giue, or restore me my money.

But

But beside all these significations, it hath another very different, as may be seene in this example: *Boluér por los súyos*, which is as much as to say in English, to doe for his, to take the part and the cause of his in hand. *Tornár*, signifieth the same thing in this sense: as, *O mi Señor, y mi Diós, si no tórnas por mi*: O my Lord, and my God, if thou takest not my cause in hand.

Abuélta.

Abuélta, which should seeme to come of *Boluér*, for that they say *buélto* and *buélta*, is neuerthelesse very different, for it hath the nature of a Preposition, signifying in English, with, or together with. Example: *Abuélta de otras cósas dióle una cadena de múnca valór*, together with other things he gaue him a chaine of great worth. *Abuélta del castigo muéstra les amór*, With chafisement he sheweth them loue.

Cábo, Noune.

Cábo, is vsed in diuers manners: as, *A cábo de tres días*, At three daies end: *al cábo estóy, no me dígas mas*, I haue it, I vnderstand, say no more vnto me: *En mi cábo*, On my side: *hermosa por el cábo*, Extremely faire: *Tomár lacósas muy por el cábo*, To take the matter very straitly, in all extremitie.

Cárgo.

Cárgo, signifieth a burthen, a waight, a charge, and is also taken for an obligation: as, *Ser en cárgo*, To be obliged, or beholden: it may likewise bee vnderstood for the faith or conscience in affirming some matter: as, *a mi cárgo*, vpon my faith, in my conscience.

Of the Verbe *Caér*.

Caér, besides that it properly signifieth, to fall or tumble, is yet found in diuers other significations, whereof it is requisite to put downe examples: as, *Caér en algúna cosa*, To remember himselfe of something; *caér en la cuénta*, To remember himselfe of the account, and storie: *aun no caygo en v. m. quien es*, I cannot yet call to minde who you are. It signifieth moreouer, to vnderstand and to perceiue a thing: as, *Entiende v. m. ésto que he dicho?* *aun no cayó en ello?* Understand you this which I haue said? doe you not yet perceiue it? *No be aun caydo en ello*: I doenot yet well vnderstand it, or comprehend it. *Caér en el rástro*, To finde out and take the trace. *De cayda vámos*, We are ruined, as who should say, we are ready to fall into ruine.

Of the Verbe *Dar*.

This Verbe *dár*, is found vsed in certaine formes of speech, where it seemeth to haue some difficultie: as, *Dar en cara*, which signifieth, to reproach, to cast in ones teeth: *dar de punto en blanco*, To hit directly in the marke or white: *Dar con la carga en tierra*, To cast his burthen on the ground. *Dar consigo en algún lugar*, To arriue in some place; *Lazar de Tor. Antes que la noche viniésse di comigo en Torrijos*; Before night was come, I came vnto Torrijos. *Dar el parabien*, To congratulate or rejoyce with one. I haue read *dar* in the signification of *hazér*, as in this example of *Cel. El diablo me da penár por el, &c.* The devill maketh me to torment for him, &c. *Dárse mañana*, To vse agility. *Dióse tan buena mañana*, He vsed such nimbleneise or dexteritie.

Of

Of the Verbe *Dexár*.

The Verbe *dexár*, construed with the Pronoune reciprocall, and the particle *de*, signifieth to forbear or leaue off: as, *Déxate déssó*, Forbear thou that; *dexémonos déssó*, Let vs forbear, or leaue off that same. His proper signification is, to leaue.

Of the particle *De*.

This particle *de*, is found sometimes to haue the signification of By, in English, as in these examples. *Tirár de la capa*, To pull by the cloake: *lleuár del sábaco*, To leade by the arme, that is, vnder the arme at the arme hole: *asir de los braços*, To take hold by the armes, *Celest. Tóma de ssos pies à nuestro amo*, Take our master by those feet: *Tirár del braço*, To pull by the arme.

Of the Verbe *Echar*.

Echar, signifieth, to cast, to driue, to put, to impose, to make, to poure out: *Echar por tierra*, To cast on the ground: *Echar atrás*, To cast behinde or backward: *echár de fuéra*, to driue out: *echár mano a espáda*, to put ones hand to the sword, id est, to draw the sword: *echár ensáco róto*, to put in a broken facke: *echár tributo*, to impose tribute: *echár vánado*, to make and proclaime an edict: *echárse en la cama*, to lie downe on the bed, or goe to sleepe: *echár agua*, to poure out water. *Echar à mal*, and *echár à perdér*, doe properly signifie in English, to spoyle. I haue found in Monte-mayor, *echár ménos*, signifying as much as, to haue want. See at the end of the third booke of *Diana*. *T porque ya éran mas de tres horas*

200 A Grammar Spanish and English.
bóras de la noche, aunque la Lúna éra tan clara, que no echáran ménos el dia, cenáron de lo que en sus currónes los pastores traían: And because it was already aboue three houres of the night, although the Moone was so cleare, that they had no want of day, they supped of that which the Shepheards brought in their scrips.

Likewise.

Ta los muertos me échan ménos,
Téntre los viuos no estó; for estóy.

I neither am o'th' number of the dead,
Nor of the liuing can I well be sed.

It hath yet another signification differing from all the rest in this phrase: *Echar de ver*, which is to say, to perceiue.

Of the Verbe *Estár*.

I might here put downe many examples of the Verbe *estár*, which should be something different, but for that they may almost all bee explicated by the Verbe, to be, which is his proper signification, I will set downe but some certaine ones: as, *Está mal conmigo, y yo no estóy muy bien con el*, which is to say in English briefly, we are not well together, or we doe not agree well one with another. *Quién está mal con Diós, no puede hazer cosa buena*, Who is not in Gods grace, can doe nothing that is good. *No está en su séfo*, He is not in his wits, He knoweth not what he doth. *En mi séfo estóy*, I know well what I say, I doe not abuse my selfe. *Estóy en éllo*, I understand it, I conceive it well. *Estársobre auijo*, To take heed of him selfe.

Of

A Grammar Spanish and English. 201 Of the Verbe *Hazér*.

Hazér, which is Englished, to doe, doth also signifie, to counterfeit, and make a shew: as, *Háze del bōo*, He counterfaits the foole, or sot; *háze dellóco*, He plaies the foole; *haz que no lo oyas*, Seeme, or make a shew not to heare it: *hazérse de nuéas*, To make a shew of not knowing a thing, as if it were new to him. It is more ouer vsed for the qualities of the time, or weather: as *háze frív*, It is cold; *háze calor*, It is hot; *háze viénto*, It is windy: *háze lódo*, It is dirty: *háze cláro, nublado*, It is cleare, it is cloudy weather: *háze niébla*, It is foggy or misty: *háze Sol, Lúna*, The Sunne shines, the Moone shines: *háze seréno*, It is sweet or milde weather: *háze buéno*, It is fine weather

Seréno, is taken for the calme and temperate time in the euening, and not for cleare and faire weather, as may be seene in this example: *Guárdaos del seréno, que es málo pára la cabça*, Beware of the serene, for it is hurtfull for the head.

Hazér mal à los cauállos, To spurre and gall, or trauell horses ouer-hard. *Hazér róstro*, To make a face, but *róstro* signifieth properly the visage. *Hazér de un tiro dos cuchilladas*, to giue two flashes at one blow.

I haue found in *Miranda's Grammar*, *No hará Carréra à vnciégo*, to say, hee will not shew the way to a blinde man.

Hauér.

Of the Verbe *hauér*, I doe not remember to haue read any great difficulties: only I haue obserued *con quién lo has*, to signifie, to whom wilt thou it? see his declining, and also the beginning of this collection.

Hállar.

Hallár.

Of this Verbe *hallár*, *Miranda* hath put downe some examples which doe not declare any difference as touching the signification, but serue to confirme the thing so much the better: as, *Halládo lo hauéis el comedór*, *halládo lo hauéis el beuadór*, *halládolo hauéis el jugadór*; which signific, you haue certainly found him the glutton, the drunkard, the gamester. I haue read in *Celestine*, *No me hállo de plazér y allegria*, which is vnderstood in English, I am quite transported with pleasure and ioy. *Dárse por halládo*, To discouer or declare himselfe.

Of the Verbe *Yr*.

Beside that which hath beene said of the verbe *Yr*, at the end of his declining, I haue obserued some formes of speaking, wherein it is vsed, that are something difficult: as, *Yr à la mano*, to let or hinder; as, *To lo auía hécho sino que me fué à la mano*, I had done it but that he hindered me. *Yr en çága*, to goe after, to be second; *No le yua en çága*, He was not his second, he gaue place to him in nothing. *Yr de gólpes*, or *Yr de trepél*, To goe in a troupe, to goe together in a throng.

I haue read *va* and *van*, for *es* and *son*: as, *Esta obrezilla va dirigida à N.* This little worke is adressed to N. *Estas historias van disfraçádas debáxo de otras números*, These histories are disguised vnder other names.

Of the Verbe *lléuár*.

This Verbe *lléuár*, is as correlatiue opposite to *traer*, for that it signifieth to beare and carry, and *eraer*,

traer, to fetch and bring, but both signifie simply to lead and carry, and oftentimes the one is taken for the other, the rest of the significations being compounded: but besides them, they are found in certaine manners of speaking, where they doe much differ, as in these examples following: *Buén camino lléua el negocio*, The affaires or businesse goes well: *le lléuan la pena*, They make him pay the fine or penalty: *lleuaron me medio escudo por la hechura*, They made me pay halfe a crowne for the fashion or making: *La cosa no lléua remedio*, The matter is past remedie: *El melléua tres años*, He passeth me three yeares, that is to say, He is three yeares older then I.

Cesar Oudin hath here spoken concerning the difference betwixt *Nádie* and *ningúno*, for that in the French tongue they both may be interpreted after one manner, which might cause the Learner to vsometimes the one for the other; but because it is otherwise in English, I haue not thought it conuenient to translate it: for *nádie* signifieth, No body, being applied to persons, and *ningúno* is an Adiectiue that may be ioyned to any Substantiue.

Of the Verbe *Parár*.

Parár, doth properly signifie, to stop, or stay, but is vsed diuersly: as, *Parár miéntes*, To marke or take heed of. *Tu que miéntes*, lo que dízes páramiéntes: Thou that liest, beware what thou sayest: *En que paró el negocio?* What came the businesse to? *Míral y verás que tal pararán*, Behold and thou shalt see in what order they will place, how they will trim: *Déxame entre las manos aquél asnejonázo, y verás qual te lo páro*, Leaue me that blockhead in my hands,

hands, and thou shalt see how I will trim him. It also signifieth, to become: as, *Paró se bueno*, He became good. *Cañallo de buena pára*, A horse of a good stop. *Parada* signifieth also a standing to shoot at Deere in.

Of the Verbe *Passár*.

There is no difficulty in this Verbe as touching his proper signification, onely I haue obserued the Spaniards doe vse it in certaine phrases which they haue, as, *Passár por la imaginación*, or *por el pensamiento*, To come vnto ones minde: *Núncat al cósame passó por la imaginación*, I neuer thought vpon any such matter. They say *Passár de cláro en cláro*, to signifie, From one side to the other. I haue read in Monte-mayor, *passó solía*, which is a manner of speaking when they call to minde that which hath beene, and is no more, as of the good time which they haue seene, of the pleasures and pastimes of their youth past. They vse this kinde of speaking, *Passár la mano por el cérro*, signifying, to flatter or make much of, as they doe to a horse, in stroaking him vpon the backe.

Of the Verbe *Pedir*.

I haue not obserued any difficulty in the Verbe *pedir*, vnielseth in this manner of speaking, *Pedir célos*, which should signifie word by word, To demand ialousies, but the meaning of it is, To giue the party beloued to vnderstand that they are ialous of them. See Monte-mayor. *Tí quántas vézes llorándo, áy lágrimas engañosas, pedía célos de cósas, de que yo estáua burlándo*. And how often weeping, O deceitfull

full teares, did he alleage me occasions of ialousie, vpon things whereof I made a mockery.

I was not willing to passe ouer with silence the difference betwixt *pedir* and *preguntár*, for that in English they both doe signifie, to aske, or to demand. It behoueth to know that *pedir*, is to aske for to haue, and *preguntár*, to demand or aske for to know. Those that vnderstand Latine will haue no vse of this explication: For they may presently iudge that *pedir* signifieth *petere*, and *preguntár* *precunctári*, which is as much as to say *interrogare*.

Of the Verbe *Picárse*.

Picárse, is taken by the Spaniards in a signification very different from that which the simple Verbe *picár* doth denote: for it is properly vnderstood, to make a profession of some thing: as, *Picase de valiente*, He maketh a profession of being valiant: *Picase de galáno*, *picase de músico*, *picase de letrado*, *picase de cortesáno*, and other the like. And the very same may be said with the Verbe *preciárse*, as, *Préciese de valiente, de músico, &c.* They sometimes moreouer say, *Tíene púntas*, as, *Tíene púntas de letrado*, He maketh a profession of being learned.

Quebrár.

Quebrár el enójo, To discharge his choller: quebrár signifieth properly, to break. Quebrar el ojo al diablo, To venture vpon somewhat, supposing that being once done, it will euer after be easie. Quebrár un ojo, To put out an eye.

Of *recaudár* and *recáudo*.

Recaudár, hath the signification of *cobrár*, which is, to recouer ; as, *Recaudár réntas*, To recouer and receiue rents. *Cest*. *No hize sino llegar y recaudár*, I did but arriue and recouer, or get immediatly that which I demanded. *Recáudo*, which of most Spaniards is pronounced *recádo*, doth extend it selfe much farther then the Verbe in diuersitie of significations, for sometimes it signifieth that which the Italian calleth *recapito*, and may be Englished dexteritie; sometimes it is taken for prouision : as, *à buén recáudo vengo*, I come not vnprouided. Likewise, *Ponér recáudo*, To haue care or diligence : It signifieth moreouer a message, and a present which is sent from one to another, and in generall when they will briefly signifie all that is belonging to any thing, they vse this word *recádo*, which in this sense may be construed, wherewith : as if being about to write, they should aske for pen, inke, and paper, this might well bee said, *Dame recádo pára escriuir*, Giue me wherewith to write. So likewise, *Dad nos recádo pára almorzár*, Giue vs wherewith to breake our fast.

Of *Reboluér*.

Reboluér, compounded of *boluér*, signifieth to trouble, to remoue, and to turne vpside downe, from whence commeth *rebuélta*, a tumult: *rebuélta*, the participle, is said of a woman which is but newly risen, which is with her haire about her cares, and which is not as yet made ready. They also say, *Reboluér se con una mugér*, To meddle or make with a woman.

Of

Of *Ser*.

The Spaniards vse diuersly this Verbe *ser*, and sometimes differently frō that it signifieth in English, as, *Que ? todo ha de ser ingár*? What ? will they doe nothing but play ? *Todo ha de ser passeár*? Will they walke for euer ? *Si que no ha de ser todo andárse à la flor del bérro* ; It is well knowne that all ought not to goe gather the flower of Water-cresses : this is a manner of speaking which is said to slothfull people, and such as will doe nothing. *Si Diós fuére servido*, If it please God. *Si v.m. fuére servido*, It it please you. In his proper signification they say : *Es un perdido*, *vn necio*, *vn vellaco*, *vn bono*, *vn haragán*, *vn fullero* ; He is a lewd creature, a foole, a knaue, a blockhead, alubber, a cosener. To describe a theefe they say, *Es un gáto*, *es de tierra de Asia*, hee hath nailes, or clawes : vpon this word of *Asia*, the allusion is very pretty, for *asir*, signifieth to catch and take hold off. To decipher a man that is subtil, they doe vse these manners of speaking : *Es un mono*, *es un zorro*, *es un pérro viejo*, *es un bividór* : He is a monkey, he is a fox, he is an old dogge, he is a craftie headed fellow. *Miranda* adioyneth these formes ensuing ; *Bien sábe quántos son cinco*, *llega os à el que se le cae la cápa*, *no le echaréis daldo falso*, *ni que bono es el mógo*. *Pués ten le el pie al herrár*, *meté尔de el dedo en la bocá* ; all which are manners of speaking proper to the Spaniards, being applied in the same sense that the former. They doe also vse this Verbe in comparisons without the Adiectiue : as, *Es un Cesar*, *es una gallina*, *es como un óro*, *es como una céra*, *es como unaniéne*, *es como una pez*. He is a Cesar, he is a hen, *It*

It looketh like gold, It is as yellow as wax, It is as white as snow, It is as blacke as pitch. *Eso es miel, manteca y pan pintado*, That is as sweet as hony and butter, and sugar cakes, or figured bread. *Ser parte*, to be sufficient, *Eso no fué parte para que yo lo hiziese*, That was not sufficient to cause me to doe it. *No soy parte para ello*, I am not sufficient for that.

Of the Verbe *Traer*.

Traer, which is, as I haue already said, opposite to *Reuar*. besides that it signifieth, to bring, and to leade, is sometimes taken, to put in vse, or to practise, as, *Traer entre las manos*, To vse, or put in practise. *Celest.* where Centurio speaketh of the diuers maners of slaying, he faith, *Las que yo uso y trágo entre las manos, son espaldarazos, sin sangre*, Those which I vse, and chiefly doe put in practise, are blowes giuen with the sword flat-wise vpon the shoulders, without fetching the bloud. *Traer en lenguas*, To tell from one to another: *Míra no seas tráydo en lenguas*, Looke that thou beeft not the fable of the people, that they make not their tales of thee.

Of *Tomar*:

Tamartino, or *tiénto*, To iudge, or giue iudgement. *Tomar la boz a algúno*, signifieth to heare newes of his enemie; as, *Tomóle la boz que el Emperadór, estáua muy cerca con su exército*, Hee had newes that the Emperor was very neere with his Arme. *Celest.* *Pórque adónde me tomare la boz me halle apercibida*, To the end that where I shall haue newes of my enemie, I finde my selfe in readinesse to fight.

fight. *Esta cosa es de témo*, This matter is of importance. *Tomar* signifieth properly, to take.

Of *Votar* and *Voto*:

Votar, signifieth to say ones minde or opinion, and *voto*, is the said opinion, in this signification. *Votar* is also construed, to vow, or make a vow and promise to God, and *voto* Noun, shall be the same vow. The Spaniards vse this last signification in their oathes: as, *Voto a Diós*, I make a promise to God; they say moreouer, *júro a Diós*: But those that haue leße impriety, will say, *voto a diez*, which shall be vnderstood *a diez diablos*.

Of the Accent that ought to be made in the Spanish Pronunciation.

To auoid all tediousnesse and prolixitie, it behoeth to make a diuision of the words ending in vowels and consonants, which is partly already shewed at the beginning of this Grammar.

Now it is requisite to know that if the word doe end in a consonant, which cannot be but in one of these six, *d, l, n, r, x, z*, (to the which may be adioyned *s*, when it is found in the singular) and that it be of one only syllable, it shall not bee needfull to giue any rule thereof, for that the accent cannot bee but vpon the same. But if it be compounded of many syllables, the accent shall be made vpon the last: as, *Lealdad, humanidad, ciudad: mercé, paré: valladolid, madrid: virtud, seneñad*: to which may bee annexed the second person plurall of the Imperatiue of euery coniugation, which euermore end in *ad, in ed, or in id*: as, *amad, andad: hazed, comed: venid, dezid*: and moreouer all those that doe end in *d*.

In *l*, *as*, *General*, *animál*, *señál* : *niél*, *biél*, *batél* : *abril*, *brasil*, *candíl* : *caracól*, *Español*, *arreból*, *azúl*.

These following are excepted, *árbol*, *mármol*, *cónsul*, *hábil*, *débil*, *fértil*, *frágil*, *móbil*, *ángel*, *cárgel*, *apóstol*, *Cristóval*, *fácil*, *diffícil*, *dócil*, *estéril*, *útil*, *estíercol*, *trébol* : the which are pronounced with the accent vpon the penultima, as you see them marked : and in the plurall number it behoueth to put the said accent on the same syllable or vowel, as in the singular : *as*, *General*, *generáles* : *animál*, *animáles* : *batél*, *batéles* : *árbol*, *árboles* : *cónsul*, *cónsules* : *hábil*, *hábiles* : &c.

In *n*, *as*, *Capitán*, *faysán*, *Iuán* : *almazén*, *rebén* : *mastín*, *hollín*, *orín* : *mesón*, *coraçon*, *gurrón* : *atún*, *sagún*.

I haue found some excepted : as are, *Cármén*, *crimen*, *ymágen*, *márgen*, *órden*, *orígen*, *vírgen*, *exámen*, *númen*, *volúmen*, *bitúmen*, *Estéuan* : all which are knowne to haue the accent in the plurall number, vpon the Antepenultima : *as*, *órdenes*, and not *ordenes*, which should be a tense Subiunctiue of the Verbe *ordenár*.

In *r*, *as* *Albeitár*, *açucár*, *acibár*, *albañár*, *muladár*; and proper names of men, *as*, *Gaspár*, *Baltazár*; likewise all the infinitiues of Verbes, *as*, *Amár*, *hablár*, *bazér*, *boluér*, *dezír*, *morír*, &c. *Mugér*, *plazér*, *añír*, *albañír*.

These following are excepted, *Alcáçar*, *ámbar*, *án-sar*, *açófar*, *tíbar*, *cáncer*, *carácter*.

In *or*, *as* *Amadór*, *bazedór*, *labradór*, *oradór*, *pecadór*, and infinite more.

In *x*, *as*, *Carcáx*, *almofréx*, *relóx*, *amoradúx*, and some few others.

In *z*, *as* *Capáz*, *rapáz*, *sagáz* : *arredréz*, *jacéz*, *vejéz* ; *perdiz* *nariz* ; *aráz*, *albornáz* ; *capúz*, *orosúz*.

From

From these are excepted certaine Nounes, or rather Surnames of families, which doe end in *az*, and in *ez*, *as* : *Díaz*, *Aluarez*, *Núñez*, *Pérez*, *Suárez*, *Gómez*, *Sánchez*, *Martínez*, *Rodríguez*, *Benítez*, *Sáyaz*, *Láynez* ; all which haue the accent vpon the penultima or antepenultima.

Of the words that end in *s*, I haue not found any of the parts declinable, hauing the accent vpon the finall, sauing *Diós*, which is as it were a monosyllable, and *anís*.

Of the indeclinable there be many that haue the accent vpon the penultima, *as* *ántes*, *de brúces*, *agáras*, *agatillas*, *a sabiendas*, *Léxos*, *entónçes*. Some also put it vpon the last, *as*, *atraués*, *al renés*, *después*, *jamás*, and others the like.

As touching the words that end in vowels, they haue the accent very vncertaine, and it will be difficult to giue any perfect rule thereof ; yet neuerthelesse it is behouefull to speake so farre as we shall be able.

It is first requisite to note, that if the word consist but of two syllables, the accent shall be made vpon the first, and for those of three or more, some will haue it on the penultima, others vpon the antepenult, and of this last ranke shall be those that haue the letter *i*, or *y*, in the penultima, before the consonants, *c*, *t*, *l*, *m* : *as*, *Músico*, *síndico*, *áfico*, *flemáti-co*, *colérico*, *exército*, *hábito*, *azéyte*, *deleyte*, *aféyte*, *báyle*, *fráyle*, *paráyle*, *boníssimo*, *malíssimo*, and in summe, all the Superlatiues that end in *ssimo*.

Nounes Diminutives ending in *ico*, and *ito*, are excepted from this rule, hauing the accent vpon the penultima, *as*, *boníco*, *chiquito*, and so generally all other Diminutives of whatsoeuer terminations they be,

be, as, *asnillo*, *cestillo*, *moquélo*, *borrochuélo*, and likewise those which are of the Feminine Gender.

Of the Nounes ending in *ia*, some are accented vpon the *i*, which maketh the penultime syllable, as, *Alegria*, *couardia*, *filosophia*, *fantasia*, *policia*, *alcanzia*, *porfia*, *señoria*, *sangria*, *valentia*, and others which are either direct Spanish, or else Greeke, for those that be rather Latine, doe put the said accent vpon the antepenultima, which may be seene in these following; *auséncia*, *blasfémia*, *deméncia*, *doléncia*, *escória*, *eficácia*, *glória*, *indústria*, *infámia*, *injúria*: *Lazéria* is of those, notwithstanding it be not Latine. *Académia* is so likewise, *miséria*, *memória*, *rábia*, and many such others.

There are a great number ending in *a*, with an indifferent consonant, which haue also the accent indifferently, for some haue it on the penultima, and others on the antepenultima: of the penultima, or last syllable saue one, I haue found, *Alcanála*, *sepultura*, *locúra*, *cordúra*, *dispúta*: and of the antepenult, I haue obserued, *Alcándara*, *alhóndiga*, *pérdida* Noun, to distinguish it from the Feminine Participle *perdida*, which followeth the rule of the Masculine *perdido*, hauing the accent on the Penultima, as also all other Participles haue it.

These Aduerbes *acá*, *allá*, *acullá*, are accented vpon the finall *a*, as you see them noted: so this other *quiçá*, and semblably those which doe end in *i*, as, *ay*, *allí*, *aquí*, with their Compounds. *Marandí*, and *caquiçamí* Nounes, doe follow the same rule.

As touching Nounes ending in *io*, I haue found as much difficultie, as in others, for some haue the accent on the *i*, as, *Aluedrío*, *desafío*, *desuário*, *haftio*, *Indio*,

Indio, *nauío*, *poderío*, *rocío*, *Señorio*, *sombrio*, *vazio*, and some others which the diligent shall be able to note.

Others accent the antepenultima, as, *adultério*, *agráuio*, *almário*, *aduersário*, *boticário*, *bárrio*, *contrário*, *pátrio*, *précio*, *menosprécio*, *palácio*.

There be found some ending in *o*, as much differing as those in *a*, as, *Tabernáculo*, *báculo*, *Ostáculo*, *higado*, which haue the accent on the antepenult; and others haue it on the penultima, as, *Tauernéro*, *hornéro*, *harnéro*, which with very little iudgement may be discerned.

Accent of Verbes.

We haue alreadie said, that all Infinitives of Verbes haue the accent vpon the last syllable, as, *amár*, *hablár*, *podér*, *dezír*, *morír*, &c.

The first and third person singular of the Preterperfect of the Indicatiue, haue their accent vpon the last syllable, as, *Yo amé*, *aquel amó*; *yo perdi*, *el perdió*, *yo escriuí*, *aque'l escribió*.

Some are excepted, which haue the penultima long, as are, *búne*, *bíno*, of *bauér*: *bíze*, *bízo*, of *bazer*: *andúne*, *andúno*, of *andár*; *púde*, *púdo*, of *podér*: *púsc*, *púso*, of *ponér*: *díxe*, *díxo*, of *dezír*: *túne*, *túno*, of *tenér*: *estúne*, *estúno*, of *estár*: *trúxe*, *trúxo*, of *traér*: *súpe*, *súpo*, of *sabér*: *víne*, *víno*, of *venir*: *cúpe*, *cúpo*, of *cabér*: *quíse*, *quíso*, of *querér*.

In the Future of the Indicatiue, the three Persons Singular, and the third Plurall, haue their accent on the finall syllable, as, *Amaré*, *amarás*, *amará*, *amarán*: *haré*, *harás*, *hará*, *harán*: *diré*, *dirás*, *dirá*, *dirán*, &c. And as for the first and second Person plurall, they shall haue it on the Penultima, as, *amaremos*,

amarémos, amareys : harémos, bareis, diremos, direys, &c.

The second Person Plurall of the Imperative which endeth alwaies in *d*, hath his accent (as is alreadie said) vpon the last syllable, as, *amád, hazéd, coméd, verid, &c.* But it is to be noyed, that Spaniards doe ordinarily in speaking omit the sound of the said *d*, leauing notwithstanding the accent vpon the Vowell, that precedeth it, as, *amá, hazé, comé, dezí, &c.* Except *oyd*, which neuer loseth the *d*.

The Imperfect of the Indicatiue, Optatiue, and Subiunctiue, and the Pluperfect of the two last, as also the Future of the Subiunctiue, in the singular number, haue cuermore the accent on the Penultima, in all the three Persons, and in the Plurall, the first and second still haue it on the Antepenultima: as for the Indicatiue, *Amáua, amáuas, amáua, amáuamos, amáuades, amáuan.* For the Optatiue and Subiunctiue, *amásse, amásses, amásse, amássemos, amássedes, amáffen.* Likewise, *amára, amáras, amára, amáramos, amárades, amáran.* For the Future, *amáre, amáres, amáre, amáremos, amaredes, amáren.* This second person plurall of the Future is abridged very often by Syncope, as for *amáredes*, it is written *amárdes*, retaining neuerthelesse his accent vpon the second syllable. Finally it may be easily knowne, that there where the accent is put in the singular, it is found in the plurall, that is to say, vpon the same vowell, whether there be an addition of a syllable or no.

It is yet behouefull to say for a conclusion, that there are certaine Nounes & Verbes which haue great affinitie in writing, and notwithstanding are different

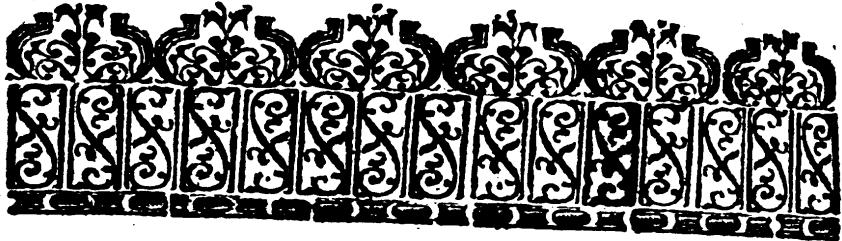
rent in pronunciation, as *Magnífico, magnifica, magníficos, magníficas*, which being Nounes, doe require their accent vpon the Antepenult. But *Magnífico, magníficas, magnifica*, Verbe, hath the said accent on the Penultima, and the same shall be found of many others that haue this affinitie.

In conclusion, behold that which time hath permitted me to collect, beseeching the Readers, friendly to aduertise me of the faults that they shall finde in this little Collection, and to accept of the good will which I haue had, and shall euer haue to doe better.

Farewell.

F I N I S.

P 4



DIALOGOS FAMILIARES EN LENGUA ESPAÑOLA.

Por I. de LUNA, Castellano.

DIALOGO PRIMERO, ENTRE VN MAESTRO, y vn Discipulo.

Discipulo.

BEs o las mános de vueña mercéd.
Maestro.

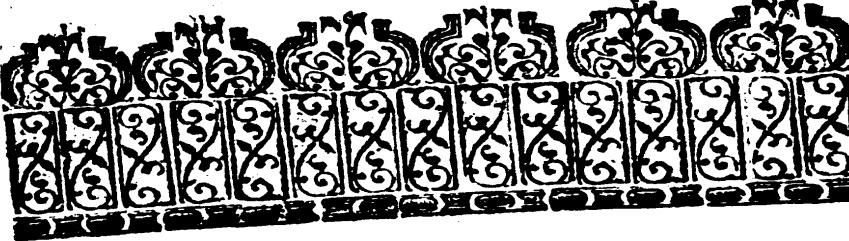
Yo las de vuéla mercéd: Que es ésto
que siémpre viéne tárde?

D. La ocasión Señor ha sido, ciérta
ocupación precisa que he tenido.

M. Al mal pagador núnca le faltan escusas, sabe vué-
la mercéd la licón de ayér?

D. Si Señor; sólo querría suplicar a vuéla mer-
céd, me dixéisse el modo que se tiene en España en sa-
ludár, y las palábras de cumplimiento mas ordinárias.

M. No se puéde dar vna régla tan general, que sír-
va para tódas las Prouincias, hauiéndo en cada vna
su particular uso, pero en todas éllas se tiene por
bueno,



FAMILIAR DIALOGUES IN SPANISH.

By I. de Luna, Cast.

THE FIRST DIALOGUE, BETWEENE THE MA- ster and the Scholler.

Scholler.

IR, I kiss your hands.
Master.

And I yours. How is it that you still
come late?

S. A certaine urgent affaire, Sir, hath
beene the occasion that hath detained me.

M. An ill paymaster never wants excuses; are you
perfect in your yesterdaies lesson?

S. Tea Sir, but I would only beseech you to relate unto
me the manner of saluting used in Spaine, and such
complementall words as are most commonly spoken.

M. There can no rule be giuen so generall, that may
serve for all Prouinces, euery one having its particular
use; yet that of the Court is held for good, and appro-
ved.

buéno, y acertado el de la corte, el qual es como se sigue. Quando vno va a visitár à otro que se su iguál (que es de lo que tratámos) acercando se adonde está el a quien va à visitár, le dize. Beso las manos de vueña mercéd; el visitado responde, yo las de vueña mercéd: el que visita pregúnta, como está vueña mercéd? El otro responde, a seruicio de vueña mercéd, y vueña merced como está? El que visita responde, à seruicio de vueña merced, de qualquier suerte que estuviere. El que es visitado dize al otro, suplico à vueña merced, se sirua de tomár vna silla. Conuiéne notár, que el mejor lugár para sentárse, es el mas junto del estrádo, que es vn lugár en que las dámás se siéntan, leuantado de tierra vn palmo, cubierto de alhôibras, y lléno de almohádas. En Francia ponen en lugár de estrádo vna camilla verde. El mas honrádo lugár de la mesa es la cabecera. El segundo después de este, es el de la mano derecha del que está a la cauccéra. El tercero, el de la mano hizquierda, y así por orden, vno a la mano derecha, y otro a la hizquierda.

D. Y quando dos salen de casa, que lugár se hade dár al que queremos honrrár?

M. Siempre lo hémos de lleuár a la mano derecha, sin mudár, y si son tres, el mas digno se pone en medio, el segundo à su mano derecha, y el tercero a la hizquierda.

D. He oydo dezir que los Espaňoles son muy descorteses, y que desmiénten a vn hombre (como quien no dice nada) sin pedir perdón, como hazen los Francéses quando contradízen a algúmo.

M. Verdád es que quando en España pregúnta vno a otro si ha hecho ésto, o aquéllo, y le hazen cargo de algúna cosa, el otro responde libremente si, o no,

ued in all of them; which is as followeth. When any one goeth to visit another his equall (for thereof we speake) approaching neare unto the place where he is, hee saith unto him. I kisse your hands Sir; the party visited answereth, and I yours; he that visiteth demandeth, how doe you Sir? the other answereth, at your seruice Sir, and you Sir, how are you? The party visiting replieth, at your seruice in what estate soever. He that is visited, saith unto the other, I beseech you Sir be pleased to take a chaire. It is requisite to note that the chiefest place for sitting is the nearest to the cloth of state, which is where the Ladies and Gentlewomen doe sit, being raysed a handfull from the ground, couered with Turkey carpets, and full of pillowes. In France they set a greene couch, in place of the cloth of state. The principall place at the table is the upper end. The next after this is that on the right hand of him that so fitteth at the end. The third that on the left hand, and so in order, one on the right hand and another on the left.

S. And when two goe forth together, what place must be giuen to him whom we will respect?

M. We must alwaies put him on the right hand, not changing at all: And if there be thre, the worthiest must be placed in the middle, the second on the right hand, and the third on the left.

S. I haue heard reported that Spaniards are very discourteous, and that they giue a man the lye (as if they said a matter of nothing) without asking pardon, as Frenchmen doe when they contradict one.

M. True it is that when in Spaine one demandeth of another if he haue done this, or that, and lay somewhat unto his charge, the other freely answereth yea, or no,

no, sin pedir perdón. Si el que afirma algo es persona de calidad dicen. Segun mi parecer, a lo que creo, o como dicen, así es, o no es, por no contradecir claramente, y así no es descortesía, antes lo sería si claramente no respondiéssen a la pregunta.

D. No me parece mal, pues como dicen en cada villa su maravilla, y en cada tierra su uso: mas el que los Españoles tienen de no acompañar a quien los va a visitar hasta la puerta, de la calle, no me agrada.

M. Respondiendo a lo que a vuestra merced le parece descortesía en los Españoles, digo que la costumbre es de no porfiar mucho, y así dicen, mas vale ser necio que porfiado. Quando un Francés va a visitar a un Español, y siguiendo el uso de Francia porfiá demasiado, el Español guardando el de España, lo dexa muchas veces en la puerta del aposento: pero quando los Españoles se visitan unos a otros, saben bien el uso, y costumbre, y así se dexan acompañar hasta la puerta de la calle, de donde se sigue, que no es descortesía la que los Españoles usan con los Franceses, mas ignorancia, del modo de Francia, que es de porfiar tanto, que cansan, y se cansan.

D. Querría saber si es verdád, lo que me han dicho, que las mugéres no acompañan a los hombres que las ban a visitar.

M. Verdad es que no házen, sino leuantárse en pie si están sentadas, y hazérles una reverencia, dexando los y solos, sino tienen algún criado que los acompañe.

D. Y las mugéres, con las mugéres?

M. Házan

no, without any asking of pardon. If he that affirmeth somewhat be a person of account, they say, As it seemeth to me, as I believe, or as they say, it is, or it is not so, to avoid a direct contradiction; and therefore it is no discourtesy, but would rather be so, if directly they should not answer to the demand or question.

S. I doe not mislike it, seeing as they say, In every towne his wonder, and in every Countrie his custome: but that which the Spaniards use of not accompanying to the street doore or gate, such as doe goe to visit them, doth in nowise please me.

M. Answering to that which seemeth unto you, a discourtesy in Spaniards, I reply, that they are not accustomed to contend much, and therefore they say, Tis better to be unciuill then contentious. When a French man goeth to visit a Spaniard, and following the custome of France, doth ouer-much contend, the Spaniard obseruing that of Spaine, leaueth him oftentimes at his Chamber doore: But when Spaniards doe visit one another, they know the use and custome, and so permit themselves to be accompanied to the street doore or gate; whereupon it followeth, that it is no want of courtesie that which the Spaniards use unto French men, but ignorance of the fashion of France, which is to contend so much, that they both wearie others, and are wearied themselves.

S. I would gladly know, whether it be true as I haue heard, that the women doe not conduct forth the men that goe to visit them.

M. It is true that they doe not, but only rise up from their seats, and make them a reverence, leaving them to themselves, unlesse they haue some servant to accompany them.

S. And the women, with the women?

M. Like

M. Házén como los hombres con los hombres.
D. Tienen los Españoles algúna ceremonia diferente de los Francéses quando comen?

M. La differéncia que áy, es que los Españoles antes de comér muy pocas veces se laban las manos, que es vna porquería de mas de marca.

D. Y que escusa se da a esto?

M. Aunque no es muy buena se puéde admirar, y es que no tocan nada que no háyan de comér.

D. Tan poco los Francéses en las mesas de calidád.

M. Con todo esto áy mucha diferencia, porque los Españoles no ponen sino vn plato descubierto, del qual dan a cada vno vn poco en vn platillo, y quando el que parte vee que acában lo que les han dado, toma otros platillos, y da a cada vno su parte, y lo mesmo háze de todos los otros platos, y ésta es la escusa que se puéde dar al no labárse las manos.

D. No es bastante, porque el que parte toca lo que los otros han de comér.

M. Verdád es, pero con vn tenedor.

D. Quién repárte?

M. En la mesa de los grandes, el Maestre-sala, en las otras la áma de casa, o el que se comide à ello.

D. Bríndan en España?

M. Nolo házen, sino quando comen con los estrangéros.

D. Dízen que los mas honrádos se leuántan los priméros de la mesa.

M. No se leuantan los priméros, pero nengúno lo háze hasta que el mas digno, o mas anciáno se quíere leuantar.

D. Y

M. Like as the men with the men.

S. Use the Spaniards any different ceremonie from the Frenchmen when they eat?

M. The difference is, that they seldom times wash their hands before meat, which is, as great a filthinesse as may be.

S. And what excuse give they for it?

M. Although no very good one, yet it may be admitted, and it is, that they touch nothing which they are to eat.

S. Neither doe French-men at mens tables of account.

M. Notwithstanding there is much difference, for Spaniards haue but one dish uncovered upon the table, whereof they giue part to every one upon a little plate, and when he that carueth, perceiueth them to haue eaten it, he taketh new plates, and giueth to euery man his part, doing in the like manner by the rest of the dishes, and this is the excuse that may be giuen for not washing their hands.

S. It is not sufficient, for he that divideth toucheth that which the rest are to eat.

M. It is so, but with a little Forke.

S. Who is it that distributeth?

M. At great mens tables, the Caruer, at others the Mistresse of the house, or some one that sheweth himselfe officious therein.

S. Doe they drinke to one another in Spaine?

M. They doe not use it, unlesse when they dine with strangers.

S. They say that the greater persons rise first from the table.

M. They doe not rise the first, but none doth it till the most worthy, or ancientest person be pleased to rise.

S. And

D. Y si vno tiéne necesidád, o gana de hazér lo, ha de aguardár a la sorna de vn viejo cadúco, que si comiénça, a contár algo, es mas largo que Mayo, y ma emfadoso que enamorado pobre?

M. Diziéndo con licencia de vueſa mercéd, se puéde leuantár.

D. Huélgome de sabér lo que vueſa mercéd me ha dicho, aunque créo no hauérlo menester, porque no piénſo yr à Eſpaña en mi vida, mas por lo que puéde ſucedér, es buéno ſaber de todo. Quando vno ſe deſpide de otro, como dize?

M. Con licencia de vueſa mercéd, que es tárdq el otro respónde (ſi es ſu iguál) vueſa merced la tiéne para mandárme, y ſi es ſuperior dize, vueſa merced la tiéne, o vaya vueſa merced condiós: el que ſe va pregúnta, que me manda vueſa mercéd en ſu ſeruicio: el otro responde, yo téngo de ſeruir a vueſa merced; vltimamente el que ſe vadize, beſo las maños de vueſa mercéd, el otro respónde, yo las de vueſa merced.

D. Lo que mas péna me da, es la mudáncia de títulos que en Eſpaña acostúmbran a dar, que ſon cáſi infinitos.

M. Quién ſe lo ha dicho, le ha engañádo, que aunque áy muchos, no ſon tantos, que no ſe puédan contár, y paraque lo éche de ver, los pondré aquí.

D. Recueiré gran mercéd en ello.

M. El priméro, y mas vaxo es, *Tu*, que ſe da a los niños, o a las perſonas que querémos moſtrar grande familiaridad, o amor. *Vos*, ſe dize a los triados, o vasáſlos; *Vuestre* *vueſa* *mercéd*, *vueſtra* *mercéd*, que ſignifican vna meſma coſa, y no ſe muda ſegún la calidad de las perſonas (ſegún algunos piénsan)

S. And if any one haue neceſſitie or desire to doe it, muſt he attend the ſlowneſſe of an old transitorie fellow, who beginning ſome tale, is longer then the moneth of May, and more tiresome then a poore louer?

M. Saying, With your fauours leane, he may riſe.

S. I am glad that I know this which you haue told me, although I not beleue that I ſhall haue need of it; for I doe not think euer to goe into Spaine; but for that which may happen, it is good to know a little of all. When one taketh his leane of another, how doth he ſay?

M. With your licence Sir, for it is late; the other anſwereth (if he be his equall) you haue it to command me: and if he be Superior, he ſaith, you haue it, or God be with you. He that is going asketh, What doe you command me in your ſervice? The other anſwereth, It behoueth me to doe you ſervice; Finally, he that goeth ſaies, I kiffe your hands; the other anſwereth, and I yours.

S. That which doth moſt of all trouble me, is the varietie of titles, that they are accuſtomed to giue in Spaine, which be almoſt infinite.

M. Whofouer hath told you that, hath deceiued you, for although there be many, the number is not ſo great, but that they may be told; and to the end you may perceiue it, I will here put them downe.

S. You ſhall doe me a great fauour therein.

M. The first, and meanest is, *Tu*, which is giuen to children, or to ſuch perſons whom we will ſhew great loue and familiaritie: *Vos* is ſaid to ſeruants, or ſubjeſts. *Vuestre*, *vueſa* *merced*, *vueſtra* *merced*, ſignifie one thing, and it is not changed according to the qualitie of the Persons (as ſome think) but is chosen.

énsan) pero esta mudanza viéne de parte del que habla; que si es de los mas ladinos dize *Vueſaſte*, el común *Vueſa merced*, y los mas rústicos *Vueſtra merced*; El qual título se da a todos grandes, y pequeños: *vu. Señoría*, a los *Cóndes*, *Marquéses*, y *Obispos*, a los quales se déue de derecho. A los *Varones*, *Vizcónedes*, *Abádes de mitra*, sus amigos solos les dan el título de *Señoría*. A los *Presidentes*, y *Oydores*, los lláman *Señoríi*, solo en sus tribunales. *Vueſa excelencia* a los *Dúques*, *Virréyes*, y generales de armadas. *Vueſa Alteza*, a los hermanos del Rey, o a los *Principes soueráños*. A los *Réyes*, *Vueſa Maſtad*, A los *Eclesiásticos* se dize *Vueſa merced*, como al común de los *légos*. A los *fráyles*, *Vueſa reuerencia*. A los *Prelados* de vn monasterio *Vueſa Paternidad*. A los de vna Provincia, *Vueſa Reuerenda Paternidad*. A los generales de vna Religión, *Vueſa Paternidad Reuerendíſſima*. A los *Arçobispos*, y *Cardinales*, *Vueſa illuſtríſſima Señoría*. Al *Papa*, *Vueſa Santidad*.

D. Mejór hazen en Francia, que a todos los iguálan diciéndo les *vos*.

M. Esta sola raçón mueſtra ser malo el *vſo* della, pués iguála al Príncipe con el *ganapán*, y no haze distinción de personas, siéndo jústo la háya.

D. V.m. estará enfadado de mis nécias pregúntas.

M. No lo puédo estar, no siéndo lo ellas, antes la receuiré muy grande, que me pregúnte todo lo que fuére de su gusto, pués el mio no es, sino de servirle.

D. *Vueſa merced* me obliga siémpre, a que lo haga; vn escrupulo me quédá.

M. Diga le *Vueſa merced*, porque no es bueno andár con la conciencia escrupulosa.

D. Es

chosen and applied according to the language of him that speaketh; for such as be well spoken say *Vuesaste*, the common *Vueſsa merced*, and the rudeſt ſort *Vueſtra merced*; the which title is giuen to all, be they great or little: *Vu. Señoría*, to *Earles*, *Marqueſſes*, and *Biſhops*, to whom it is due of right. To *Barons*, *Vicounts*, and *Abbots*, their friends only giue them the title of *Señoría*. To *Presidents* and *Counſellors*, they attribute *Señoría*, but when they are in their ſeats. *Vueſa excelencia* is for *Dukes*, *Vice-Royes*, and *Admirals*. *Vueſa alteza*, for the King his brothers, and *soueraigne Princes*. *Vueſa Mageſtad*, for the King. To Ecclesiasticall persons, they say, *Vueſa merced*, as to the common ſort of *Lay-men*. To the *Religious*, *Vueſa reuerencia*. To the *Superiours* of a *Monasterie*, *Vueſa Paternidad*. To those of a *Provinſe*, *Vueſa Reuerenda Paternidad*. To the *Generals* of an *Order*, *Vueſa Paternidad Reuerendíſſima*. To *Arch-Biſhops*, and *Cardinals*, *Vueſa Illuſtríſſima Señoría*. To the *Pope*, *Vueſa Santidad*.

S. Me thinkes they doe better in France, making them all equall by this word *vous*.

M. That reason only ſheweth their custome to be ill, ſeeing they equall the Prince with the Porter, and make no diſtinctions of persons, being fit that there were.

S. You are ſurely wearied with my foolish queſtions.

M. That I cannot be, ſince they are not ſuch; but you rather doe me a great fauour, by asking of me that which anſwereth to your deſire, ſeeing mine is only to doe you ſeruice.

S. You ſtill doe oblige me to render unto you that ſeruice: Now I haue one ſcruple remaining.

M. Speake it hardly, for it is not good to carrie a ſcrupulous conſcience.

S. The

D. Es pués el caso, que no sé la caúsa, porque ban tantos Franceses a España, y viénen tan pocos Espanóles a Francia, siéndo la Francia mejor tierra, mas rica y fértil que España, (al parecer de los vnos, y de los otros.)

M. La ocasión desto es que la Francia no solo es fértil en frutos, y animales irracionáles, pero mucho mas en los racionáles, por ser el temperamento de la tierra mas apto a la generación; y assí ay tantos hombres, que hauiendo poblado su tierra, quédan aun para poblár las otras, y siéndo España vna de las vezinas, le cábe su parte, y mas, por ser menos fecunda que las otras, que es porque los Espanoles no viénen a Francia.

D. Buena es esa ración, pero no créo es la principal, porque muchos Espanoles van a Italia, Flándes, y à las Indias, sin ser Soldados, solo por veér la tierra, y viuér en ella, y à Francia no viéne ninguno.

M. La principal piénsalo es, que los Espanoles siéndo como son altíos, no quieren yr adonde los menos precian, y adónde no les permiten mandar, como házen en algunas partes de Italia, Flandes, y las Indias.

D. Suplico à v. m. me perdóne el trabáxo que le he dado.

M. Ninguno puéde dar vuestra mercéd a quien tanto le de sea seruir como yo.

D. Mandárme puéde vuestra mercéd, y consu licéncia me vóy, antes que entre la calór.

M. Vuestra mercéd la tiene para mandárme.

D. Beso las manos de vuestra mercéd.

M. Yo las de vuestra mercéd.

Fin del primer Dialogo.

DIALOGO

S. The case then is, that I know not the cause wherefore there goe so many French-men to Spaine, and come so few Spaniards into France, being a better countrie, richer, and more fertile then Spaine, according to the opinion of all men.

M. The occasion hereof is, that France not only is fertile in fruits, and living creatures irrational, but much more in rational, for that the temperature of the countrey is more apt to generation; and so there bee so many men, that hauing peopled their owne, there yet remaineth wherwith to make populous other countries: and Spaine being a neighbouring one, receiueth her part and more, by reason it is leſſe fruitfull then others, which is the cause why the Spaniards come not into France.

S. That is a good reason, but I cannot thinke it is the principall, for that many Spaniards goe into Italie, Flanders, and to the Indies, without being Soldiers, only to see the country and liue therein, and to France tbere commeth not one.

M. The chiefe reason I beleue is, that the Spaniards being as they are high-minded, will not goe where they least esteeme of them, and where they not permit them to command, as they doe in some parts of Italie, Flanders, and the Indies.

S. I beseech you pardon me the paines that I haue put you to.

M. You cannot put him to any that so much desireth to doe you service as I.

S. You may comma ndme, and with your leane I goe, before the heat comes in.

M. You haue it to command me.

S. Sir I kisse your hands.

M. And I yours Sir.

An end of the first Dialogue.

Q3

DIALOGO SEGVNDO ENTRE VNA DAMA Y VN GALAN.

Galan.

NO puédo dexár de tenér oy muy buén dia,
pués también lo he commençado.

Dama.

Que ha hécho ésta mañana, que tanto se promete
al fin del dia?

G. Veér el sol que aóra me alúmbra.

D. Ségun ello todos tendrémos buén dia, pués
a todos nos alúmbra, y le veémos todos.

G. Aunque es verdád, que muchos véen el Sol
que yo véo, y que ninguno lo puéde veér sin que-
dár deslumbrádo, pero no todos conócen su virtúd,
y valór como yo.

D. La causa será que v. m. es gran Filósopho.

G. Aloménos que sóy mas enamorado que to-
dos.

D. De quien?

G. De quién lo meréce.

D. Y quien es la que tanto meréce?

G. La que es digna de ser amáda, seruida, y ador-
ada de todos.

D. No áy valór, hermosura, donáyre y grácia,
que

THE SECOND DIALOGVE, BETWEENE a Lady, and a Gallant.

Gallant.

I Cannot chuse but haue a good day of this, since
I haue so well begun it.

Lady.

What haue you done this morning, that you are so
confident in the rest of the day?

G. I haue seene the Sunne which now illumines me.

L. According unto that, we all shall haue the like,
seeing it doth lighten vs all, and all of vs behold it.

G. Although the truth is, that many doe see the
selfe-same Sunne which I doe, and that none can behold
it without remaining dazled, yet all know not the ver-
tue and worth of it as I doe.

L. Certainly the reason is, that you are a great
Philosopher.

G. At least-wise that I am the most enamoured of
all men.

L. Of whom?

G. Of her that deserueth it.

L. And who is she that so much deserueth?

G. One that is worthy to be loued, serued, and ado-
red of euery man.

L. There is no worth, beautie, comeliness, and
grace,

que vista de cerca no descubra alguna imperfección, por la qual se haga indigna de lo que parecía ser digna vista de léxos; y así créo que vió de aparte a ella dama, de quien tanto encarece el merecimiento, si ya no es que la vió de noche, o con antojos.

G. No caben en el amor tan sincero, firme, y constante, con que la amo, quiero, y reuerencio, ni menos fué de noche, no la hauiendo en su presencia: ni fué de léxos, pués no lo está, ni puéde estarlo de mi alma.

D. Del dicho al hecho ay gran trécho, y si en v.m. no es así, por dichosa se puéde tener esta dama, que mereció ser la suya: pero diga me así Diós le guarde, quién es? conózco la yo?

G. Como a si propia.

D. Como se lláma?

G. Súma de perfección.

D. Aora la conozco menos. Que señas tiene?

G. Es alta como yn pino, blanca como la nieve, colorado como vna rosa, y los miembros de su cuérpo tan bien proporcionados, que ni el pincel pudo, ny pintor jamás supo hazer cosa que en algo le igualase, ni a las mas mínimas de sus perfecciones llegásse.

D. No es malo el encarecimiento.

G. No lo es, porque léngua humána no lo podrá dignamente hazer. Quien podrá encarecer, y lo ar su frénte espejada, lisa, y áncha? sus ojos grandes, negros y rasgados, con dos arcos celestiales, que parecen dos soles puestos debaxo de arcos triumpháles? Que diré de la boca pequeña, y almibarada, lléna de Orientales perlas, que con los rubíes de sus diuinos lábios, hazen vna mas que admiráble harmonía, y labór?

grace, which seene neere hand, doth not discouer some imperfection, by which it is iudged unworthy of what it seemed before to merit, being beheld afar off; and so I imagine you saw that Lady a good distance from you, whose merits you extoll so much, or else by night, or only by fantasie and desire.

G. There was never loue so sincere, firme, and constant, as that wherewith I loue, desire, and reurence her, neither was it by night, not hauing her in your presence, nor yet a farre off, seeing that she not is nor can be so from my soule.

L. Saying and doing are two different things, and if it be otherwise in you, that Lady may be accounted happy, who deserved to be your mistresse: but tell me for Gods sake, who is it? doe you know her?

G. Even as your selfe.

L. How is she cald?

G. The summe of perfection.

L. Now I know her worse then before. What signes hath she?

L. She is high as a Pine, white as the snow, red as a rose, and all the members of her body so well proportioned, that neither pencil could, nor Painter euer knew how to make a thing, that might any waies equalize her, or correspond with the least of her perfections.

L. This is no illexaggeration.

G. It is not as you terme it, for no humane tongue is able worthily to doe it. Who shall be able to magnifie and praise her bright, smooth, and large forehead? her full, and blacke eies, with two celestiall circles, seeming two Suns plac'd vnder triumphant Arches? What shall I say of her little, and sugered mouth, which with the Rubies of her divine lips, make a more then admirable worke, and harmonie? The delicate superficies

labór? La tez delicada de su ángelico rostro, nadie la
puede mirar, sin quedár deslumbrado; sus cauéllos
son otros tantos rayos del Sol, que alumbran, y au-
éntan las tiniéblas de mi alma.

D. V. m. ha soñado en algúna Nympha del
Tájo.

G. No es Nympha soñada, mas la que déixa atrás
à Venus, y háze ventaja a Diana: es finalmente el al-
ma del alma, vida que me la da, fin y paradéro de to-
das mis esperanças, y deseos: sus manos largas,
blancas, y hermosas, para mi se muestran cortas, y
encogidas.

D. Dese priesa, que segun lléua la taréa no aca-
bará oy de dezir alabanças de su dama; y dize las de
tan buen donaire, que no me cansas en escuchárlas,
pero acábe si quiere de dezir me quien es, y adonde
viue.

G. Viue en mi alma, y es la que en mi puso la S. y
clábo.

D. De que sírven la S. y clábo?

G. No ay mas mal sordo que el que no quiere enten-
dér, y a buen entendedór pocas palabras.

D. Con las que v. m. ha dicho, no se puede ra-
streár ni dar alcánce á ésta su Diósa.

G. V. m. sabe que la S. y clábo son señales de su
gención, y esclavitud.

D. Que? v. m. quiere dezir que es escláuo?

G. Digo lo, y assi es verdád.

D. Quien lo captiuó?

G. Amor.

D. Pues como? dizen que es libre. Supplícole
me diga que es amor, porque de las razones que me
ha dicho, me han nacido mil difficultades.

G. Amor

superficies of her Angelicall face, no man can behold it,
not restraining dazeled; her haire are like the rayes of
Phebus, which illuminate and chase away the tenebries
of my soule.

L. You haue dreamed on some Nymph of Tagus.

G. This is no Nymph imagined, but she who surpas-
seth Venus, and excels Diana: Finally, she is the soule
of my soule, the life which preserueth mine, the end and
terme of all my desires and hopes: her long, white, and
faire hands, only for me seeme short, and shrunken vp.

L. You had neede make haste, for according to the
taskē you take, youl scarce make an end to day of your
mistresse prayses; and you speake them with so excellent
a grace, that I am not weary with attention: but tell me
if it please you, who shēe may be, and in what place spee-
lineth.

G. In my heart, where shēe hath put the S. and
lauē.

L. What signifies the S. and laue?

G. Theres none more deafe then hee that will not
heare, and a word's enough to the wise.

L. With those which you haue said, I cannot informe
my selfe of this your Goddesse.

G. You know that S. and laue, are tokenes of sub-
jection and servitude.

L. What? will you say that you are a Slave?

G. I say so, and it is true.

L. Who captained you?

G. Loue.

L. How so? They say that he is free. I beseech you
let me understand what is loue, for upon that which
you haue told me, I finde a thousand difficulties to arise.

G. Loue

G. Amóres vn Diós, vna Deydád, el hijo quelláman de Venus, vna passión del alma, vn fuégo del alquitrán, que la consúme, y deríte; vn raudál impenitúoso, que ahóga, y anéga la ración, sin que se puéda valér de las vélas, y rémos de buénas consideraciones: finalménite, es vn Réy tiráno, de cuyo império y mandado, pocos o ningúnos escápan, sino es los que huyen. Este Réy, raudál, fuégo, passión, deydád o Diós, predomína, señoréa, y sujéta de tal suerte y manéra a los hómbres, que no se puéden llamár libres, ni horros, mas escláuos, y captiuos; aherrojádos con vna esclauitúd dúcet, con vn captiuério amable, y con vna sugención voluntária.

D. Si voluntário, luégo libre; si libre, no forçoso: si no es forçoso agráuio le haze v.m. en llamárse escláuo.

G. Es libre, pués lo queremos, pero este querer es forçoso, y ésta fuérça voluntária.

D. En el alma me holgaríà de hablár à ésta dama, para dezírlle lo mucho que déue à v.m.

G. Nada deue quien todo lo meréce, y mucho meréce quien nada déue.

D. Dexémos éstas methaphisicas, y dígame quién es.

G. V. m. sabe que à ningúna mugér del mundo puéden quadrár tan bien las alabánças referidas como a si propria, y allí ninguna otra puéde ser mi dama, mi señóra, y mi bien.

D. Es possible? con esse fabór no piénso oy comér.

G. El fabór ha de venir de v. m. que es poderosa para darlo.

D. V. m. lo tiéne de quien lo estíma mas que de mi,

G. Love is a God, a Deitie, one called the sonne of Venus, a passion of the soule, a wild-fire, which consumeth and melteth it; an impetuous torrent, which doth drowne and denoure reason, not permitting it to make profit of the Sailes and Ores of good considerations: In briefe, he is a tyrannous King, from whose command and Empire, but few or none escape, excepting those that flic. This King, torrent, fire, passion, Deitie or God, doth in such wise predominate, governe, and subiect men, that they neither can be termed free, nor exempt from seruitude, but slaves, and captiues; enchainéd with a sweet bondage, with an amiable captiuie, and with a voluntarie subiectiōn.

L. If voluntarie, it is then free; if free, not forced; and if it be not forced, you doe ill to give your selfe the name of slave.

G. It is free, seeing we are willing of it, but this will is forced, and this force is voluntarie.

L. I should be heartily glad to speake unto this Lady, that I might tell her how much she is indebted to you.

G. Whomeriteth all, cannot be indebted, and much merit they who are in debt nothing.

L. Let vs leaue these supernaturall things, and tell me who she is.

G. You know that the like praises cannot so well correspond with any woman as with your selfe, and so no other can be my Lady, my Mistresse, and my good.

L. Is it possible? Truly after so great a fauour I haue nothing to desire.

G. The fauour is to come from you, who are powerfull to grant it.

L. You haue it of her whose you more estimate then mine,

mi, y a quien conuiénen mejor estos epítetos, y alabánças.

G. No es nacida, ni puéde ser nazca otra que merezca lo que v. m. meréce, ni quién puéda hazérme fabór semejante.

D. Aóra véo que se burla de mi.

G. Iuro por vida de v. m. y mia que no lo hago; sino que comisoénto las cosas, las digo; y como las digo, las cumplo.

D. *Another dog with this bone*, no soy de las simples que se usan, que creén por euangélio las palabras de los hómbres, siéndo mas engañosas que las de la serpiénte, y mas suáues que voz de Sirena, que cantando mata.

G. En mala opinión tiéne v. m. à los hómbres.

D. Antes no los téngo en muy buena, porque *Quién malas mañas ha; tarde, o nunca las perderá.*

G. No áy regla sin excepción.

D. Esta no la tiéne, y assí me ratifico en dezir, que ningún hómbre guárda las reglas, y léyes del amór.

G. Que? el amór tiéne estatutos, y ordenánças para los que militan debáxo de su vandéra, y estandárte?

D. Quien duda?

G. Quien no lo sábe como yo; supplíco à v. m. por lo que mas quiéra, me diga essos estatutos, y pragmáticas de amór.

D. V. m. piénsa jurár por su vida, y créo que se engaña.

G. Si pensásse que esse crédito fuéisse verdadéro, bastaría para quitármela vida.

D. La mia perdería, si v. m. se persuadiéisse lo contrario.

G. Dexémos

wine, and to whom those Epithetes and praises are more proper.

G. She yet is, and ever shall be unborne, who may equal you, or who may doe me the like grace and favour.

L. Now I perceive you mocke me.

G. I sweare by both our liues I doe not; but as I know the things, I speake them; and as I speake them, I accomplish them.

L. Keepe this for others, I pray you, I am none of those simple ones, who hold the words of men for Gospel, being more deceitfull then them of the Serpent, and sweeter then the voice of a Siren, who singing murdereth.

G. You haue an ill opinion of men.

L. It may be I haue no very good one: For he that hath ill tricks, will leaue them either late or never.

G. There is no rule without exception.

L. This hath not any, and so I confirme my speech, that the rules and lawes of Loue are obserued by no man.

G. What? hath Loue statutes, and ordinances for them that fight under his colours, and Ensigne?

L. Who doubteth it?

G. They which know it no better then I doe; I beseech you by that you most of all loue, to informe me of those statutes, and pragmatics of Loue.

L. You thinke you sweare by your owne life, but I believe you deceiue your selfe.

G. If I thought that beleefe were true, it would be sufficient to make an end of me.

L. I should detest my owne life, did you persuade your selfe the contrarie.

G. Let

G. Dexémos esta question indecisa, y hágameli mercé d que le suplico.

D. Quien le ha dicho que lo sé?

G. Persuado me lo, porque quien tan bien sabe amartelar desdeñando, sin duda se le alcánça a todo lo demás.

D. Por acortar razones, y persuadir a v. m. à que déxe su intento, comenzando diré los epítetos de que los amantes deuen estar adornados; podrá la sírui de hazer le desistir de este combate, viéndo la difficultad al ojo.

G. Si por dar vn asalto a esta fortaleça, me fuere necesario perder cién mil vidas, perder las he, antes que tórne el pie atrás.

D. Aunque pierda docientes, no la escalará; pues la defienden razón, honestad, y prudencia: mas tornando a propósito, los atributos que amor quiere que sus soldados tengan, son tantos quantas letras hay en el A, B, C: porque así como los niños comienzan siempre por ella, sin la qual no pueden aprender; así amor quiere que todos los que sean de exercitár en su arte, les siruan de rudimentos, fundamentos, y cánjas, sobre quien el edificio asiente. Ha de ser pues el enamorado. Alaguéño, benigno, cortés, dadioso, elegante, firme, galán, honesto, inventor, lisonjero, mudo, nouelero, ofrecedor, prudente, quereto, recatado, solícito, temeroso, vigilante, joven, zelante.

G. Estos renombres, o calidades de que deul estár dotado el enamorado algunos me parecen superfluos, y otros contrarios al mismo amor. De que sirue que vn galán sea honesto; siéndo la honestad contraria a sus deseos?

D.E.

G. Let us leave this controversie undecided, and doe me the fauour which I desire you.

L. Who hath told you that I know it?

G. I imagine so, for who so well knowes how to make men become amorous by disdaining them, without doubt is not ignorant of the rest.

L. To cut off reasoning, and to persuade you that you give ouer your intent, I will begin to declare the Epithets wherewith all Louers ought to bee adorned; perhaps it may serue to make you desist from this combat, perceiving the difficulty so apparent.

G. If to give one assault unto this Fortresse, I am to lose a hundred thousand lines, they all shall perish, rather then give backe a foot.

L. Although you lose two hundred thousand, you will not scale it; seeing that reason, honesty, and prudence doe defend it: but returning to our purpose, the attributes which Louer requireth in his Soldiers, are as many in number as there be letters in the Alphabet: for as children doe still make their entrance by the same, without which they are not able to learne; so louer will that all such as desire to exercise themselves in his Art, make benefit of rudiments, foundations, and upon which the edifice may stand firme. The Louer ought therefore to be, a flatterer, benigne, courteous, liberall, elegant, constant, gallant, honest, inventorie, faire spoken, mute, a reporter of newes, a promiser, prudent, quiet, discreet, carefull, timorous, vigilant, young, and jealous of the honour of his mistresse.

G. Some of these surnames and qualities, wherewith the Louer ought to be endowed, seeme unto me superfluous, and others contrary to Loue it selfe. To what purpose is it that a Gallant be honest, when honesty is contrary to his desires?

L. The

R

D. El galán que no se muestra honesto, jamás alcanzará el fin de los: porque la dama q̄ conoce en su enamorado vn deseo de deshonrrárla, no solo le due aborrecer, más huir del como de vna viuóra ponçónosa.

G. Para que ha de ser el enamorado invento?

D. Porque las mugéres somos amigas de cosas nuéras.

G. Y para que el ser alaguéño, y lisonjero, siéndo cosas tan aborrecibles.

D. Estan grande la fuérça de la lisónja, que aunque clara y manifiestamente se conózca, es siempre tenida por alabánça; particularmente de las mugéres, que aunque sean féas como vn escarauájo, se persuáden ser otra Venus, o Diana: y lo que mas es, que si a vna viéja de ochénta años le dizen niña, es tan grande la fuérça del alabánça, que crée, y tiéne por cierto ser así, y que ayér salió de mantillas, o que los años en ella han sido días.

G. Buéna es essa raçón, pero de que sirue prometer lo que muchas vézes no se puede cumplir.

D. Aunque así seá, siémpre las promésas manifiestan la buena voluntad, que es causa de imprimir en el corazón de la dama las espécies del amante, que con dificultad se borrhán, particularmente si son las primeras, por que el amór primero dificultoso es de olvidar.

G. Pedi que el enamorado se a temeroso, es querer vna cosa contraria al mesmo amór, y como dígen, al modo vergonçoso el diablo lo llevó à palacio.

D. Este temor no ha de ser de modo que acobarde, o quite la osadía de acometer todas las impreñas que el amór le ofréce: solo se ha de mostrár temeroso de

L. The Gallant that not sheweth himselfe honest, shall never attaine to the end of them: for the Lady which perceiueth in her Suiter, but one desire of dishonring her, not only ought to abhorre him, but flee from him as from a poisonous viper.

G. Wherefore should he be an Intentor?

L. Because we women are desirous of nouelties.

G. And why a flatterer in behaviour, and in words, being things so generally abhorred?

L. So great is the force of flatterie, that notwithstanding it be plainly and manifestly knowne, it is alwaies taken for praise; particularly of women, who although as blacke as a beetle, persuade themselves to be a second Venus or Diana: and what is more, let one call an old woman of fourescore yeares standing, a little girle, the effect of praise is such, that she believeth, and holdeth it for certaine to be so, and that but yesterday she went out of her swadling cloots, or that the yeares passed haue beene daisies.

G. That is a good reason: but to what end is it to promise that which many times cannot be effected?

L. Although it be so, yet alwaies promises doe manifest the good will, and imprint in a Ladies heart the species of the Louer, which cannot easily be blotted out, especially if they be the first; for the first loue is hard to be forgotten.

G. To wish that a louer be fearefull, is to desire a thing contrarie to loue, and as we say, A faint heart never won faire Lady.

L. This feare ought not to be such, as to make him a coward, or take away his courage from executing as many enterprises as loue presents him with: only he

de perder la joya que posee en acto, o en deseo. Este miedo haze que la dama multiplique los fabores para fortificar en su amor a su medroso amante; el qual gana con el temor, lo que no huuiéra hecho siendo osado.

G. Como hará para ser jouén el viejo ránco?

D. Si el viejo se muéstra móco en sus acciones, las damas le amarán mas que al móco, que por ellas quiere que lo tengan por cánio decrépito.

G. La glósa es mejor que el testo: no sé como pueda seruir a v. m. la que me ha hecho, sino suplicándole que pués ha sido mi maestra, así sea la mira y blanco adonde se encaminen mis acciones, y descos.

D. Aconséjole búsque otro terrero adonde pueda encaminar sus flechas.

G. Jamás mi alma buscará otra gloria, ni bienaventuranza.

D. A otra puerta, que esta no se abre.

G. En la de v. m. pidiré limosna, a que perdi una aguja; aquila tengo de hallar.

D. A otro perro con esse hueso, y a Diós que me mudo.

G. Plegue a el que sea de cruel en mansa.

D. Quedese v. m. con Diós, que es tarde.

G. No áy cosa mas cierta, pués el Sol se pónce, y con su ausencia mi alma quedá como vn cuérpo sin ella.

D. Béso las manos de v. m.

G. Yo las de v. m. millares de vézes.

Fin del Segundo Dialogo.

must seeke to haue it, of losing the Jewell that he possesteth actually, or in desire. And this feare canseth the Lady multiply her fauours to fortifie the loue of her timorous Suiter; who gaineth that by feare, which he woulde haue lost by rashnesse.

G. How shall a mouldie old fellow doe to make himselfe seeme young?

L. If he shew himselfe greene in his actions, Ladies will loue him better then the young man, who by the same appeareth to be older then he.

G. The exposition is better then the text: I know not how I shall be able to acknowledge the fauour which you haue done me, unlesse in beseeching you, that since you haue beene my mistresse, you be also the marke and white whereto my actions and desires may be directed.

L. I counsell you to seeke some other But to let flic your shafts at.

G. My soule shall never seeke other glorie or felicitie then your selfe.

L. To another gate, for this will not be opened.

G. At yours I will beg for almes: Here I haue lost a needle, and here I am to finde it.

L. Keepe that for some other body: and so farewell, for my humour changeth.

G. I pray God it be frome cruell to tractable.

L. Retire your selfe, for it is late.

G. There is nothing more certaine, seeing the Sun setteth, and with his absence my soule remaineth as a body without one.

L. I kisse your hands.

G. And I yours Lady a million of times.

An end of the second Dialogue.

DIALOGO TERCE RO, ENTRE DOS DA mas Lamadas Doña Maria, y Doña Anna.

Doña Anna.

EN el alma me pésa que v. m. me hágá ganado por la mano, yo dezía a mi Escudero fuése a saber si la hallaría en casa, porque quería yr a besárle las manos, y cumplir con mi obligación.

D. M. La mia es de hazérlo; suplicando a v. m. me perdone el no hauér lo hécho antes: la causa ha sido la enfermedad de Don Diego.

D. A. Que es lo que v. m. me dice? el señor Don Diego ha estádo malo?

D. M. Si lo ha estádo me pregunta, como? ha pensado morir.

D. A. Por vida de francisquito que no lo he sauido. Que enfermedad ha tenido?

D. M. Vn dolor de costado, que en cinco días los Médicos le hauían desauciado.

D. A. Agráuio me ha hécho v. m. en no abisármel, pues sáue quan feruidóra le soy.

D. M. V. m. me hágce en todo mercé: fué tan repentina la enfermedad, que no me dió lugár para reboluérme, ni pensar en lo que deuía. Gracias

sean

THE THIRD DIA LOGVE BETWEENE TWO Gentlewomen, the one called Doña Ma ria, and the other Doña Anna.

Doña Anna.

I am sorry at my heart that you haue preuented me: I bid my man goe know if I should finde you at home, for I was willing to goe thither, that I might kisse your hands, and accomplish my obligation.

D. M. Mine is to doe so, beseeching you to pardon me that I haue not done it before: the infirmitie of Don Diego hath beene the cause of it.

D. A. What's that you tell me? Senior Don Diego hath beene ill?

D. M. How, aske you me if he haue beene so? why he thought he should haue died.

D. A. Now as I live I did not know so much. What disease hath he had?

D. M. A paine in his side, so great, that in five daies the Physicians had giuen him ouer.

D. A. You haue done mee wrong in not letting mee understand it, seeing you know how much I am your servant.

D. M. You doe me favour in all things: the fickle was so sodaine, that it gaue me not leisure to turne my selfe, nor to thinke upon what was requisite. Thanks be

sean dadas a Diós, que me ha mirado, con ojos de piedad.

D. A. Como se halla a ora?

D. M. A seruicio de v. m. fuera de peligro.

D. A. Leuántate?

D. M. Oy ha sido el primer dia.

D. A. Que médico le ha visitado?

D. M. El Dotor Martínez, que sin duda es el mejor de España.

D. A. Sangra mucho.

D. M. Mi marido tenía grande necesidad dello.

D. A. Lo que es bueno para el hígado, es malo para el bágo; para vnas enfermedades es bueno el sangrío mucho, y para otras no. El mismo nos contaba, que se hauía hallado en vna consulta el otro dia, donde estaban seis médicos, entre los quales no se hallaron dos de vn mesmo parecer.

D. M. Si va à dezir la verdád: créo que los Médicos házen como Zandajuélo, uno de los mas famosos de Granada, el qual tenía todas las enfermedades ordinarias escritas en vn papél, y las púrgas, jaráues, y otras medicinas en otro. Y quando le llamában para que visitáse algún enfermo, no quería que le dixesen que enfermedad tenía, porque dáua a entendor que en viéndo al enfermo, y en tocando-le el púls, conocía la enfermedad, y su malicia. Nunca recetába en casa del enfermo, porque segun el dezía, nengún médico hauía de ordenár nada, sin estudiárlo primero (como sería justo que lo hiziesen) assí lo hizía nuestro buén Zandajuélo; porque en llegando a su casa, tomaba los dos papéles, y sobre el de las enfermedades dexáua caér vn dado, y quantos señaláua, éran las enfermedades que aquel enfermo tenía, mas la principal éra la sobre quien el dado se parába:

bee to God that bee hath beheld mee with the eies of mercy.

D. A. How is he at this instant?

D. M. Out of danger, at your seruice.

D. A. Doth he rise?

D. M. This was the first day.

D. A. What Physician hath visited him?

D. M. Doctor Martinez, who without doubt is the best in Spaine.

D. A. He causeth his patients to bleed much.

D. M. My husband had great need of it.

D. A. What is good for the liner, is ill for the spleene: for some infirmities it is good to bleede much, and for others not. He himselfe told vs that the other day bee was present in a consultation, where there were six Physicians, amongst which not two of them were found to be of one opinion.

D. M. If it behoueth to say the truth, I beleue that Physicians doe like Zandajuélo, one of the most famous of Granada, who had all the ordinary diseases written in a paper, and the purges, syrrupes, and other drugges, in another. And when they called him to visit some sick person, he was not willing that they should tell him what disease he had, for he made them beleue that in seeing him, and touching his pulse, he knew his infirmities and griefe. Hee never prescribed any thing in the sickes parties house, saying that Physicians ought to ordaine nothing, without studying upon it first (as it should be fit that they did it) and so did our good Zandajuélo; for returning home to his house, he tooke the two papers, and upon that of the infirmities let fall a dye, and how many it was, so many were the diseases of his Patient, and the principall was that wherenpon the dye stayed: The same he did upon the paper of the medicines

parába: lo mesmo hazía sobre el papel de las medicinas, y la que el dado tocaba éra la que ordenáua, y tantas véz es la repetía quantas el pintába: quando tornáua para ordenár, éran tantas las aréngas quechazía, los discursos que formába, y las raçones con que mostráua el oríjen, y fundaménto del mal, que aun que al enférmo le doliéssle la cabéça, le hazía creé que éra la mano, o el píe. El mundo se iua tras él, y éran tantas las cūras, que de ordinario hazía, que su fama se estendió por España, y de toda ella lo cambiáuan a buscár: a la hora desu muérte confesó a un amigo súyo el modo que en curár tenía, y dixo que pensáua hauér cumplido bien con su oficio, y mejor que los otros, porque el dexába en las manos de Diós, y de la suérte, el sabér la enfermedád, y la medicina pròpria para ella; mas que los otros, o con malicia, o con ignoráncia matában muchos hombres.

D. A. Diós me libre de tal gente; lo peór que áys, que mal que nos pese hémos de venir vn dia a caér en sus manos.

D. M. A doña Ysabél de medráno ha pensado matár vn médico, con vna púrga.

D. A. Esta en ésta ciudad?

D. M. Como si está? v. m. se desayúna aóra de ello?

D. A. No ha sino quattro dias que me díxo su suégra hauía receuído cartas, que no vendrían en séys méses.

D. M. Verdád es que su hijo así lo escriuió, y vrdió, pero uno piénsa el vayo, y otro quien lo ensilla.

D. A. Cu-

dicines, and ordained that which the die touched, applying it so many times as were the number of the spots he threw with it: when he returned to make his ordinances, so many were the artificiall speeches that he made, the discourses that he formed, and the reasons that he alledged, to shew the originall, and foundation of the grieve, that although the sick person had a paine in the head, he made him beleue it was in his hand, or foot. All the world sought after him, and the cures were so many which he ordinarily did, that his fame was extended throughout Spaine, and from all parts thereof hee was sent unto: At the houre of his death hee confessed to a friend of his, the forme that hee had vsed in his cures: saying he thought that he had well performed his duty, and better then others, for that he left in the hands of God, and Fortune, the knowledge of the disease and the medicine proper thereto; but that other Physitians, either through malice or ignorance, are the death of many men.

D. A. God deliuer vs from such people; the worst is, that ill as it grieues vs, we must one day fall into their hands.

D. M. A Physitian thought to kill Doña Isabel of Medrano with a purge.

D. A. Is she in this city?

D. M. How if shee be? doe you make a wonder at that?

D. A. Not abone foure daies since her mother in law told me she had received letters, and that they would not come this halfe yeare.

D. M. True it is that her sonne so writh, and plotted it; but man purposeth and God disposith: one thing thinkes the borse, and another thing hee that saddles him.

D. A. Relate.

D. A. Cuéntame v.m. lo que pasa, que me tiene suspensa.

D. M. V. m. sabe bien los altiváxos que en este casamiento húuo, y la contradicción de los parientes de Dóña Ysabél, porque conocían bien que Don Martín Núñez sería siempre el mismo, que *Quien malas mañas ha, tarde, o nunca las perderá*: y *Quien ruyna en su villa, también lo será en Seuilla*; y aun *Quien háze un cesto hará ciento*. Finalmente se casaron, y acabada la boda, y tornaboda, el marido persuadió con buenas palabras a la buena Señora, que fuéssen en romería a Santiago de Galicia: ellá se lo creyó. *Quien crée de ligero, agua cóje en arnero: y Quien mal no háze, en mal no piénsa*. Tomaron todas las joyas de oro, pláta, y piédras preciosas, que Dóña Ysabél tenía muchas, y muy buenas, y con grande cantidad de dineros, se pusieron en camino, en compañía de dos amigos de Don Martín, tales como él, que como dízen. *Dime con quien viues, y dírte he que máñas has, y no con quien náces, sino con quien páces; una ovéja sarnosa, hará ciento*. Fue con ellos la Ordóñez.

D. A. Quién es esa Ordóñez?

D. M. Vna de las mas malas mugéres del mundo: vna putilla, que ha rebuélto mas casas que pelos tiene en la cabéça, que son tan pocos, que se pueden bien contár, porque siempre está llena de báuas.

D. A. Y como permitió Doña Ysabel, que la acompañáse vna tan mala hembra?

D. M. No lo sabía la pobre señora. Prosiguiendo mi cuento, con esta compañía, dos criados, y vna criada, en un cóche de retorno, llegaron a Segovia, y

D. A. Relate unto me what hath passed, for I long to beare it.

D. M. You well know the difficulties that there were in this mariage, and the contradiction made by the kindred of Doña Isabel, for they were well assured that Don Martin Nuñez would be always the same man, for that euill customes are hardly to be left: Who is wicked in his owne Towne, will be so likewise in Seuilla; and againe, who maketh one basket, will make a hundred. Finally they were married, and the wedding, and all after-feasting ended, the husband with faire words persuaded the good Gentlewoman to goe on Pilgrimage to S. Iames of Galicia: She gaue credit to it. Who is ouer-apt to beleue, is subiect to repent: and who doth no euill, thinketh upon none. They tooke all the Jewels of gold, siluer, and precious stones, for Doña Isabel had many and very faire ones, and with a great summe of money that she had, they undertooke their iourney, accompanied by two friends of Don Martin, such as himselfe; for as they say, Such as a mans company, such his manners: Ill education corrupts nature; One scabbed sheepe will infect a hundred. Ordoñez went with them moreover.

D. A. Who is that Ordóñez?

D. M. One of the wickedst women of the world: a whore, that hath beene the ouerthrow of more families then she hath haire upon her head, which are so few, that one may easily count them, for she is always full of the pox.

D. A. And how could Doña Isabel endure, that so pernicious a creature should accompanie her?

D. M. The poore gentlewoman did not know so much. Now proceeding in my tale, with this companie, two Seruving-men, and one maid, they arrived at Segovia,

y despues de hauér visto la puente, que dízen him
el diablo, y otras cosas curiosas de aquel lugár, Don
Martín rogó a todas fuésen a veér con el vna prima
suya Religiósa, que en aquella ciudad estaua : ha-
endo la visto, a Doña Ysabél le tomó gana de entra
a veér el monasterio, porque su marido se lo per-
dió : entraron solas las mugéres, y los hombres hi-
ziéron, *La yda del cuerno marino, que fué y num-
vino.* Estando aun la señóra doña Ysabél, la Ordó-
ñez, y su criáda, La Abadesa reciuió vna carta de
Don Martín, en que le suplicáua entretuuiéssse allí
su mugér, entretanto que el íua al Escuriál, por su
negocio de grande importancia, de donde tornaría
dentro de dos días : los quáles no éran aun cumplidos
quando reciuió otra, en que la rogáua no dexáisse
salir a su mugér hasta que voluiéssse, por que el
rey le mandáua yr con vna ambaxáda a Francia, y
que dentro de séys méses tornaría : Suplicando le
tuuiéssse grande cuénta con la Ordóñez, porque éra
una mugér disoluta, y que si la castigáua, y hazía ha-
zér penitencia, haría vn sacrificio muy agradable a
Dios. Doña Ysabél quedó muerta, la Ordóñez hé-
cha vn diablo, y la pobre criáda sin sabér que dezir
de tal carta.

D. A. Iesús ! que me cuénta v. m ? quedaron les
algunas jóyas, o dineros ?

D. M. Como en mi ojo : todo se lo lleuó Don
Martín.

D. A. Y era verdád que yua a Francia ?

D. M. Como v. m ; fuése a las Indias, adónde se-
gun he oydo dezir, entretiéne vna hermosa Indiána.
Finalmente doña Ysabél escriuió a vn tio suyo, que
al cabo de dos méses de reclusión ha ydo por ella, y
llegáron

via, in a hired Coach, and having scene the bridge,
which they say, was made by the devill, and other curio-
us things of that place, Don Martin desired them to
bear him company to visit a cousin of his, that was a
religious woman in that Citie : after they had scene
her, Doña Isabel was desirous (at the persuasion of
her husband) to see the Monasterie : the women only
went in, and the men made the voyage of the Marine
now, that went and were returned moe. Doña Isabel,
Ordonez, and her maid being then within, the Abesse
received a letter from Don Martin, by which he besee-
ched her to give his wife entertainment, while he went
to the Escorial, about a businesse of great importance,
from whence within two daies he should returne : the
which were not yet accomplished when she received another,
wherein he desired her not to suffer his wife to
goe forth till his returne, for that the King had com-
manded him to goe with an Embassage into France,
and that within sixe moneths he shoule come backe :
beseeching her to looke narrowly to Ordoñez, for she
was a dissolute woman, and that if she did chastise her,
and make her doe penance, she shoule performe a sa-
crifice acceptable to God. Doña Isabel at this letter,
remained as one without life, Ordoñez turned devill,
and the poore maid not knowing what to say or thinke.

D. A. Iesús ! what doe you relate ? Had they any
Jewels or money left them ?

D. M. As much as in mine eie : Don Martin car-
ried away all.

D. A. And was it true that he went to France ?

D. M. A true as you did ; he got him to the Indies,
where (as I haue heard) he entertaines a beauteous Indi-
an. To conclude, Doña Isabel writ unto an uncle of
hers, who after two moneths of reclusion is gone for her,
and

llegáron el juéues à la tárde, adonde queriendo purgár, vn Médico le ha dádo vna beuida tan fuerte que ha pensado morir.

D. A. Por vida de quién sóy, que es vna história estráña ; pero díga me v. m. que hauía hecho la Ordóñez a Don Martín, que tan mal la quería ?

D. M. Es otra história apárte. Don Martín entretanto a la Ordóñez muy honrradamente, y vn dia yéndo a su casa al anochecer, tomó la lláue de la puerta como solía ; y estando acostado, oyó roncar debaxo de su cámara ; y preguntando à la Ordóñez, quién roncáua en su aposento, le díxo que era el cordero que hauía comprádo para Pásqua, y para pruéua dello le comenzó a llamar, y el à respondió valando ; mas ni el valido, ni ronquido le parecieron à Don Martín naturáles ; y así levantándose con su espáda desnuda, comenzó a punçár debaxo de su cámara : el cordero, cabrito, o cabrón, comenzó à hablar, pidiéndo perdón, y misericordia. Hizo venir Don Martín a sus criádos con vna hacha, y haláron vn Aguazil viéjo vestido a lo soldado : hicieron le desnudár, y despues de hauérle muy bien açoñado en compañía de la Ordóñez, aguardáron à que fuéssse entrádo el día, y pusieron al pobre diablo en cuéros en medio de la calle : el qual como se vió desnudo, comenzó à corrér por medio del lugár, diciéndo ; déxen me pasár, que va sobre apuésta : siguiréon le grande cantidád de mucháchos ; el se desbolló dellos lo mejor que pudo, y se metió en un montecillo que está vna léguia de la ciudad : jamás se ha sabido quién era, ni de que Religión. Por ésta burla Don Martín tenía grande ojaríca à la Ordóñez ; la pobre pensó que éste enójo se le hauía ya passado, y que quería reconciliárse con ella ; pero salió leal

reuelo,

and they arrived upon Thursday in the evening, where being willing to purge himself, a Physician hath given him so strong a potion, that he hath despaired of life.

D. A. As I like it is a strange historie ; but tell me, what had Ordóñez done to Don Martin, that he caused her so ill ?

D. M. It is another story of it selfe. Don Martin entertained her very honourably, and one day going to her house towards night, he tooke the key of the doore where he was accustomed ; and being laid downe, he heard a snoring under his bed : and demanding of Ordóñez, who it was that snored in his chamber, she answered him a Lambe which she had bought against Easter, and for profe thereof began to call him, and he likewise to answer in bleating ; but neither that nor the snorting seemed naturall to Don Martin ; and so rising with his naked sword, he began to pricke with it under his bed : the Lambe, Kid, or Ram-Goat found a tongue to speake withall, desiring pardon and mercie. Don Martin made his men come with a Torch, and there they found an old Constable attired like a soldier : they stripped him, and after they had well whipped him in the presence of Ordóñez, they staid till the break of day, and then put this poore devill naked in the midst of the street : who seeing himselfe in this plighe, betooke himselfe to runne, saying, Let me passe, for it is upon a wager : there followed him a great company of boyes ; hee shifted from them the best he could, and got himselfe to a little mountaine, a league distant from the city : It was never knowne what he was, nor of what Religion. For this deceit Don Martin did greatly malice Ordóñez, who belieued his anger was already ouer, and that he was desirous to be reconciled unto her : but it fell out quite contrary, for the Abbesse willing to keepe her some-
what

S

reus, porque, la Abadesa queriéndola poner poco en precina, no solo no lo quería sufrir, pero dezía le mil insoléncias, las quáles fueron causa que la encerraron en vn aposento, y le han hecho ayuna todo la Quarésma à pan, y agua, dando le muy aménudo la disciplina; ella dava al diablo al muerto, y a quien lo llorána, pero a mas no podér, paciencia, y barajár.

D. A. Yo creo que ni ella podría sufrir la austerdad de aquéllas buenas Religiósas, ni ellas su insoléncia.

D. M. Así es, porque cada obéxa con su pareja, ella se encontró con quien se las entendía, mas por no echar la sogata tras el caldero, sufrió la tanda, y me han dicho que vino a amar tanto a la Abadesa, que le hacía mil caricias.

D. A. Mano besa hombre, que la querria ver cortada hizo muy bien en hazér de la necesidad vísud: lástima me haze la pobre doña Ysabél. Quien presto se determina, presto se arrepiente, no quiso cuchár a los que le aconsejáuan su prouecho. Quien no crece a buena madre, creerá a mala madrastra.

D. M. Que le parece à v. m. de la locura de doña Antónia?

D. A. Para entre nosotras, no sé de donde le viene tanto tólogo, porque no ha séys méses que traya vna ropa de vurato, y ayér la vi en el sermon con vna derafo morado, asorráda de tafetán blanco, y vna vasquínia de tela de plata. No se puede negár, sino que tiene buén talle: con las dos manos le podían tomár la cintura. Las cuchilladas de la ropa tomadas con presillas de oro: vn verdugado tan grande, que apenas podía entrár por la puerta de la Capilla.

D. M. Tam.

what short, she not only would not endure it, but remained her, which was the cause that they shut her into a chamber, and made her fast the whole Lent with bread and water, giuing her very often the discipline; she cast them all to the devill, but because she knew no remedie, she was faine to be patient, and shuffe it ouer.

D. A. I believe that neither she could suffer the austerity of those good religious women, nor they her insolency.

D. M. It is true, for like will to like; she met with those that knew her full well, but to auoid casting the belue after the hatchet, she endured the taske, and I haue beene told she fell so farre in loue with the Abbesse, that she made her a thousand shewes of her aff. Elision.

D. A. Many will speake one faire that could wish to see their throat cut; she did wisely to make a vertue of necessitie: but for poore Doña Isabel I am grieved. Who determines suddenly, repente instantly; she would not give care to them that counselfd her for her good: who belieues not a good Mother, shall credit an ill Stepmother.

D. M. How like you the folly of Doña Antonia?

D. A. To speake betweene our selues, I know not from whence she bath so much brauery, for within these six moneths she had on a gowne of Serge, and yesterday I saw her at the Sermon, in one of murrey Satten, lined with white Taffata, and a petticoate of cloth of siluer. It cannot be denied, but that she bath a good shape, for with two hands one might take the compasse of her body. The flashes of her gowne are tacked with loops of gold, and her Verdingall was so great, that she could hardly enter at the Chappell doore.

D. M. I

S 2

D. M. También yo la vi, y me espanté ; porque bien sabemos quién es ella, y quién su marido.

D. A. Despues que el Dúque del Infantado entra en su casa, ha començado ha dezirle bien el náy.

D. M. Allá se lo áya Marta con sus póllos. Los cuidados del asno máran al Obispo : pués su marido gusta dello yo tambien.

D. A. La cadéna que lleuáua el otro dia la rifaron quattro Caualléros, y el que la ganó se la dió : si d'úque lo sabe, no les arriéndo la ganancia.

D. M. Quién era por vida de v. m.

D. A. No querria dezirlo à nadie, aunque diciéndose lo à v. m. haré cuénta que nenguno lo sabe. Don Iuán Vrtado se la dió.

D. M. No me díze v. m. náda de nüeuo, porque mas ha de quinze dias que dóña Catelina Mendez me contó la amistad de ésta mugér con ese cauallero.

D. A. Yo se la conté à ella en secreto.

D. M. Las mugéres no lo podemos guardár si nos lo encárgan. A este propósito contaré à v. m. lo que sucedió ocho días ha en nuestra calle, si no la cánsio.

D. A. No lo puede hazér v. m. antes recibiré en ello gran mercéd.

D. M. Fué pues el caso, que la hija del mercader del cantón de Santiago estaua preñáda, sin saberlo sus padres, ni persona alguna de la ciudad : yéndo pues à ganár el jubiléo, tomáron le los dolores del parto ; la pobre móça no sabía que hazér, ni à quien descubrirse : llegando à mi calle : entró en casa de vna conocida suya, y echándose à sus pies le pidió con lágrimas, y grande encarecimiento la socorriése, y guardásse su honra, y la de sus padres : la mugér se lo prometió con muchas veras, y assí lo hizo : por que

D. M. I saw her likewise, and was much amazed, for we well know who she is, and who her husband.

D. A. Since the Duke of Infantado visiteth her house, the world hath begunne to mend with her.

D. M. Why should mee meddle with that ? Let us not talke of what is nothing r'nto us : seeing her husband likes it, I like it also.

D. A. The chaine that she wore the other day, had bin rifled by four Gentlemen, and he which won it, gane it her: If the Duke know it, there will be somewhat to doe.

D. M. Who was it I pray you ?

D. A. I would not name him to any one, although telling it to you, I shall make account that no body knowes of it. Don Iohn Vrtado gane it her.

D. M. You tell me no newes, for it is aboue a fortnight since Lady Catherine Mendez told mee of the loue betwixt this woman and that Gentleman.

D. A. I told it her in secret.

D. M. We women cannot keepe a secret when it is given vs in charge. To this purpose I will tell you what happened in our street about a weeke a gone, if I am not troublesome.

D. A. You cannot be so, nay I shall take it for a very great curtesie.

D. M. Why then thus it was, that the Merchants daughter of the corner of S. Iames was great with child, neither her parents, nor any other person of the city knowing it : Now as she went to obtaine the Iuble, she fell in labour ; the poore wench knew not what to doe, nor to whom to discouer it : comming to our street, she went into a friends house, at whose feet she casting her selfe, desired her with teares and great importancy to succor her, and to preserue her owne and her parents honour : the woman faithfully promised her to doe so, and well performed

que con gran secreto embió à buscar vna partera, y vna áma, y dió à criár la criatura: Mas despues de hauér parido, fué necesario dar à la parida vna verna de huéuo, y como ella no la tuviéisse, fué à pedirlo a su vezina, diciéndole con grande secreto, que le díse vn huéuo para la hija de aquel mercadér, que hauía parido en su casa, encargándole el secreto: su vezina no se halló con lo que le pedía, y assí fué à la otra vezina, haziéndole la misma arénga, y como tan poco allí halláse, passó de vna en vna todas las casas de la calle, encargando à todas el secreto: de manéra que antes que volviéisse à su casa, toda la vecindad sabía el desastre de la pobre moça, y antes de la noche lo sabían todos los de la ciudád.

D. A. Por ello dízen los hombres, que no áy que fiár en nosotras; y no se engáñan mucho, aunque poco mas se puede confiár déllos, porque qual mu qual ménos, toda la lana es pélos: y entre ruyn ganado poco áy que escogér.

D. M. Como le va à doña Luysa con su marido? que me hauía dicho tenían algunas diferencias.

D. A. Al principio ella hizála desdichosa, y aora elle paga en la misma moneda.

D. M. Adonde las dan las roman, Pensó yr por lana, y ha buelto trasquilada. Con licéncia de v. m. que estárde.

D. A. Lo mas cierto es, que yo no merezco mas tiempo gozár de la compañía de v. m.

D. M. V. m. merecé tanto, que por parecerme mi conuersación indigna de ocupar su buen entendimiento, me quíero yr, basta lo que la he cansado.

D. A. La conuersación de v. m. es tan buena, que puede entretenér los mejóres entendimientos del mundo.

D. M. Bes-

performed it; for she sent very secretly to seeke a midwife, and a nurse to gine the infant sucke: But after she was brought to bed, it was requisite to gine her the yelke of an egge, and her hostesse not having any, went to desire one of her neighbour, speaking to her in great secret, to gine her an egge for the merchants daughter that was brought to bed in her house, charging her to bee secret: this neighbour had not that she sought for, and so she went to the second, making her the same speech: and as she not found one there neither, she went from one house to another thorowout all the street, enioyning them all to secrecy: so that before she came home againe the whole neighbourhood knew of the poore wenches distast, and before night it was familiar to the whole City.

D. A. For that reason doe mensay, it is ill to put trust in women; and they are not much deceived, although but little more confidence may bee put in them, for it is hard to say which are the better: another's but small choyce where the whole flocke is bad.

D. M. How goes it with Doña Luysa and her husband? I was told they were at oddes.

D. A. At the first she made it coy, and now he payes her in her owne coyne.

D. M. One bath commonly as good as they bring. She thought to goe for weoll, and hath returned shorne. With your fauours leaue, for it is late.

D. A. The most assured is, that I not deserue to enjoy your company any longer.

D. M. So great are your deserts, that by reason I esteeme my conuersation unworthy the exercising of your excellent understanding, I will take my leaue; It is sufficient that I haue wearied you.

D. A. Your conuersation is so good, that it may certaine the most pregnant wits of the world.

D. M. I

D. M. Beso las manos de v. m. por la que me hâze; que aunque séan burlas, no déxo de conoír mi obligación.

D. A. V. m. sâbe bien, que no me burlo, pues conóce lo que meréce.

D. M. Será por ser la mas humilde criâda de v. m.

D. A. Yo lo soy de v. m.

D. M. Béso las manos de v. m. mil vêzes.

D. A. Yo las de v. m. cién mil.

D. M. Yo tornaré à subír si v. m. passa adelante.

D. A. Suplico a v. m. me permita yr hasta la pêrte.

D. M. No passaré de aquí si v. m. no se torna.

D. A. Por obedecér à v. m.

Fin del Dialogo tercero.

DIALOGO

D. M. I give you infinité thankes for so great a favour as you doe me; for although they be mockes, I omit not to acknowledge my obligation.

D. A. You well know that I doe not mocke, since you are not ignorant of what you merit.

D. M. It shall befor that I am the most humble of your servants.

D. A. Nay I am yours.

D. M. I kisse your hands a thousand times.

D. A. And I yours a hundred thousand.

D. M. I will againe goe vp if you passe any further.

D. A. I beseech you let me goe to the doore with you.

D. M. I will not stirre from hence, if you not returne.

D. A. To be obedient to you.

An end of the third Dialogue.

THE

DIALOGO QUARTO, ENTRE TRES CABALLEROS, LLAMADOS DON IUAN, DON PEDRO, Y DON ALONSO.

D. I. **L**as de vosasté señór Don Pedro.
 D. P. Beso las de vuesté mi señór Don Iuán; adonde tan de mañana?
 D. I. A casa de Don Alónso.
 D. P. Yo tambien vóy allá: huélgome de haue incontrado à v. m. para que vámos juntos.
 D. I. Yo apostaré que venímos los dos à vna med-
 ma cosa.
 D. P. Yo vóy à ver à su suégro que ha venido de
 Portugál.
 D. I. Yo à lo mesmo, no sé si estará leuantado.
 D. P. Dúdolo segun es pereçoso. Entre v. m.
 D. I. No me lo mánde v. m.
 D. P. Suplicárse lo he.
 D. I. En todo obedecré à v. m. sino en esto:
 Pase.
 D. P. No lo haré aunque nos anochézca aquí.
 D. I. Entrémos quella puerta es harto anchapara
 los dos.
 D. P. No me tire tan récio, que me hará abortar,
 aunque

THE FOVRTH DIA- LOGVE BETWEENE THREE Gentlemen, named Don John, Don Pedro, and Don Alonso.

D. I. **I** Kisse your hands Señor Don Pedro.
 D. P. I yours Señor Don Iohn; whi-
 ther so early?
 D. I. To Don Alonso's house.
 D. P. I goe thither likewise; and am glad I haue met
 with you, that we may goe together.
 D. I. I leventure a wager that we came both about
 one matter.
 D. P. I goe to see his Father in law, who is come
 from Portugal.
 D. I. I for the very same, I know not whither he will
 be vp.
 D. P. I doubt it, being that he is sluggish. Goe in sir.
 D. I. Doe not command me that.
 D. P. I beseech you.
 D. I. I will obey you in all things sauing that: pray
 goe.
 D. P. I will not doe it though wee stand beere till
 night.
 D. I. Let's enter, the doore is wide enough for us
 both.
 D. P. Doe not pull me so hard, you le make mee be
 delincred

aunque el aborto no será tan buéno como el de vna
cábria.

D. A. Que milágro es este? Los dos juntos, y
tan de mañána?

D. I. Cuérpo de tal, con v. m. de mañána le pare-
ce à las diez?

D. A. Mi criédo me ha dicho que no éran sino
las ócho.

D. P. Qual el Capellán: tal el sacristán. Su criádo
sabe que v. m. es amigo de leuantársese tarde, y assí ha-
bla a sabór de su paladar.

D. I. Como viéne su suégro?

D. A. Buéno à seruicio dc v. m. ayér tarde se fué
al cortijo à veér los peones.

D. P. Nuéstra venida ha sido embálde?

D. A. Porqué?

D. P. Pórque le veníamos à veér.

D. A. Ségun esto, no córre por mi la obligación
de esta visita?

D. I. No huuiéra venido, óy si no fuéra por esta
ocasión, y pués la he perdido, quiéro que v. m. me
la agradézca, y que corra por su cuénta.

D. P. Y yo también.

D. A. Si haré, si quiéren que vámoss a palleárnos
al jardín, donde almorçáremos, si vs. ms. me la
quiéren hazér.

D. I. Que nos dará?

D. A. De vn pernil de tocino cocido en vino
blanco de Yepes, y de vn salchicón de Milán.

D. P. Quiéro el embite.

D. I. Yo también.

D. A. Vámoss.

D. I. Si el señor Don Pedro comiénça à escudri-
ñar lo que áy en su aposento, no lo sacarán de aquí
con tenácas.

D. P. No

delinered before my time, although the abortine will
not be so good as that of a Goat.

D. A. What a miracle is this? both together and so
early?

D. I. Body of me, doe you thinkē it early at ten a
clocke?

D. A. My man told me it was but eight.

D. P. Such as the Priest, such is the Clarke. Your
man knowes that you lone to rise late, and therefore
speakes to content you.

D. I. How came your father in law?

D. A. Well at your seruice: yesterday in the euening
he went to his countrey house to see his day labourers.

D. P. Is then our comming in vaine?

D. A. Why?

D. P. Because we came to see him.

D. A. According to that, the bond of this visitation
concernes not me.

D. I. I would not hane come to day had it not beene
for this occasion; but since I hane lost it, I desire you to
thanke me for it, and take it as to your selfe.

D. P. And I likewise.

D. A. I will doe so, prouided that we goe walke to
the Garden, where we will breake our fasts, may't
please you to doe me the fauour.

D. I. What will you gine vs?

D. A. A Gammon of Bacon sod in white wine of
Yepes, and a Milan sausage.

D. P. I accept of it.

D. I. And so doe I.

D. A. Let vs goe.

D. I. If Señor Don Pedro fall once to examine
your chamber, it will be hard to get him out.

D. P. I

D. P. No soy como v. m. que no mira sino a las damas.

D. I. La curiosidad no es buena en casa ajena; pero Agráuio haze à la dama, el que no le mira la cara: por estos dos proverbios, miro lo uno, y no quiero veér lo otro.

D. P. Tan grande agráuio haze al dueño de una casa el que no mira su ajuár quando es bueno, como el que no mira la cara de la hermosa dama. Señor Don Alónso de quien es este retrato?

D. A. De la mayor ramera de España.

D. I. Cuerpo de tal, con v. m. estas imágenes tiene a su cabecera?

D. P. El señor Don Alonso me ha engañado, que lo tenía por mas devoto.

D. A. Mas quisiera que v. m. me tuviéra por el mayor rufián del mundo, porque como dice el refrán, *El galán devoto es bobo, y el rufián galán.*

D. I. Yo conozco muchos caualleros, que no los son; si no por este privilegio de hauér engañado, y deshonrado a muchas simples, y ignorantes doncellas, casadas, y viudas.

D. P. Elle es un privilegio rodado, por el qual se les déue el título de caualleros con tanta ración, como a los que se hallaron en Elepanto, o en el cerco de Ambers, mostrando su valór, y bañando su espada con mil muertes de los enemigos: pero muchos áy, que con solo el deseo que tiénen de engañar a mil mugéres si pudiesen, se estiman por Caualleros; porque el deseo se reputa por hécho.

D. A. Esto me paréce como házen muchos Caualleros Francéses (o que dízen serlo) que blasfeman, y se glórian muchas vézes de hauér dormido con una mugér sin jamás le hauér llegado a un pelo de la cara.

D. I. Que

D. P. I am not like you who looke after nothing but faire Ladies.

D. I. Curiosity is ill beseeming in an others house; but be doth wrong to a faire Lady that not beholds her: and following these two proverbs, I respect the one, and doe neglect the other.

D. P. As much wrong doth bee to the master of a house, that taketh no note of his household stufte, when it is good, as he that not beholdeth the face of a beautifull woman. Señor Don Alonso, whose picture is this?

D. A. Of the veriest harlot in Spaine.

D. I. Body of me, haue you such Images at your beds head?

D. P. Señor don Alonso hath deceived me, I tooke him to be more devout.

D. A. I had rather you should take me for the veriest Ruffin of the world, for as the proverbe saith, The devout gallant is an Idiot, an the ruffin a braue fellow.

D. I. I knew many Gentlemen, which are not so, but by this privilege of hauing beguiled and dishonoured a number of simple and ignorant maids, married women, and widowes.

D. P. That is a common privilege, by which the title of Gentleman is due to them with as great reason, as to those who were present at Elepanto, or at siege of Antwerp, shewing their valor and bathing their swords in the bloud of a thousand enemies. But there be many, that with onely a desire which they haue to deceive a thousand women if they could, esteem themselves Gentlemen, taking their desire for the effect.

D. A. This me thinkes is like many French Gentlemen (or that so termes themselves) who oftentimes glory and boast of hauing laine with a woman, and never touched a haire of her garment.

D. I. What

D. I. Que lláma v. m. llegado al pelo de la rópa
El tiémpo que estúue en Francia, espérimenté una
cosa que no la huuiéra creydo si me la huuiéran di-
cho, y fué que vn Caualléro llegó à vna conuersa-
ción donde estáuan otros tres, y de vnas palábras en
ótras, vino a contár cómo la noche passada hauí
dormido con vna dámá, que nombró.

D. A. Ello fué mal hécho: los Espanóles tení-
mos esto buéno, que aunque hazémos mal, alomé-
nos no deshonrrámos a las dámás, que es vna viléu
indigna de hómbres, no solo que proféstan ciu-
dád, pero de rústicos villáños. Prosiga v. m. si se
sírue.

D. I. Los dos de los tres que escucháuan se co-
mençaron a rey়r; el Caualléro corrido preguntó la
causa, y sabido que éra porque el tercero d'ellos la
hauía dicho poco antes lo mismo; díxo, que se ha-
uía equiuocado, y que por dezir antes de ayér hauí
dicho ayér. Esto causó otra mayór rísa, porque vno
de los dos hauía dicho que el hauía estado con ella
mésma nóche: finalménťe disputando, y mintiéndo
cada vno lo mas que podía, al ruydo llegó otro
Caualléro que conocía muy bien a la dámá, y hizo
sabér a todos, que hauía mas de vn mes que estaua
fuéra de la córte, y cincuenta leguas de allí: al fin se
verificó, que solo éste Caualléro la conocía, y que
era vna de las damas mas hermósas, y honrradas de
toda la córte, y que aquéllos quátro Caualléros no la
conocían sino de oydas, y lo querían ser por ésto,
como poco ha díxe de los que lo quieren ser solo por
el desfío, que de engañár a las mugéres tiénen.

D. P. No les a conféjo véngan à Espáña à dezir
mal de las dámás d'ella, que les yrá mal, y se hallarán
burládos, porque las Espanólas no sufren cosquillas,

D. I. What doe you call touched the haire of her gar-
ments. At such time as I was in France, I made triall
of a thing which I would never haue beleevued had I
beene told it: & it was that a Gentleman came to a con-
uersation where were threes others, and from one dis-
course to another, he came to tell how that the former
night he had laine with a Lady, whom he named.

D. A. That was ill done: we Spaniards haue this
good quality, that notwithstanding wee doe ill, at the
lastrwise we not dishonour the Ladies, which is a wic-
kednesse most unbecoming men, not onely that professe
civilitie, but rude country clownes. Goe forward if it
please you.

D. I. Two of the three which hearkened beganne to
laugh, the Gentleman somewhat abashed enquired the
cause, and knowing it was because the third of them had
told the same but a little before; hee made answer
that he had mistaken, and said yesterday for the day
before. This caused a greater laughter, for somuch as
one of the two other had said that he was with her the
same night: In the end disputing, and lying every one
the most he could, there came to the noyse another Gen-
tleman, who very well knew the Lady, and gaue them
all to understand, that she had beene aboue a moneth
from Court, and fiftie leagues from thence: At last it
was verified, that only this Gentleman knew her, that
she was one of the most faire and vertuous Ladies of
the Court, and that those fourre knew her not, but by
heare say, & would be Gentlemen for this, as I said but
even now of them that will only be so by the desire which
they haue to ensnare women.

D. P. I doe not counsell them to come into Spain to
speake ill of our Ladyes here, for it will goe ill with them
if they doe, and they'le bee soundly flouted, for that
Spain is

y si házen del ójo a vno de sus máta siére, Los enti-
ránan a cenár con Iesu Chrísto.

D. A. Diziendo, y haciéndo, como la hornera al
járro; vámós a almorçár, que el almuérço está júnio
a la fuénte: siénten se vs. ms. si son seruidos.

D. I. Eſſo no haré yo para almorçár.

D. P. Ni yo tampóco. Esta es buéna hiéſca para
despertar la ſed.

D. A. La redóma está en la fuénte, remédio apro-
uado para élla.

D. I. No es málo el vino.

D. P. Vino ſin agua pára la mañana.

D. A. Vs. ms. no coínen?

D. I. No, porque eſtámos hártoſ.

D. P. Básſa pára oý.

D. A. Béuan ótra vez, pórque a bién comér, o mal
comér; tres vézes ſe ha de beuer.

D. I. Buéños frutáles áy en éſte huérto.

D. A. De todo, como pan de poya.

D. P. Esta parra es moscatél?

D. A. No es ſino moráte.

D. I. A la móga, y a la parra, álgal eſt alda. Noh
han podádo éſte año.

D. A. Ni me tiro, ni me págó; Mi ſuegro es el Tu
autem.

D. P. Que bién parécen eſtos encañicádos llénoſ
de arrayánes: ſi yo tuuiéſe en mi jardín tan buénaſ,
y eſpacioſas cálles, me exercitaría en elláſ a corrér la
ſortija.

D. A. No lo quiere permitír mi ſuegro, porque
díze que le rómpen los pimpóllos.

D. P. De que eſte inférto?

D. A. De camuéſas.

D. I. Tiéne

Spaniſh women cannot endure to be tickled, and if they
ooke but awry upon one of your great kill-cowes, they le-
nd him to prate of them in another world.

D. A. With ſaying and doing, the time paſſes away;
let vs goe to breakēſt, for it ſtands fast by the fount:
it if it pleaſe yee.

D. I. That I will neuerto a breakēſt.

D. P. Nor I neither. This is good to procure thirſt.

D. A. The bottle is in the fountaine, an approued re-
medy for it.

D. I. This wine is no ill one.

D. P. Wine without water is best for the morning.

D. A. Tee doe not eat Gentlemen.

D. I. No, because our bellies are full.

D. P. This is enough for to day.

D. A. Drinke once againe, for it is good to doe that
well though one eate but little.

D. I. There be good fruit trees in this Orchard.

D. A. Of all ſorts, good and bad together.

D. P. Is this high one a Muscadel vine?

D. A. No, it is a darke Claret.

D. I. A young mayde, and a high wine, muſt haue
their coates lifted up. You haue not pruned it this yeare.

D. A. I neither meddle nor make with it; my fa-
ther in law is the Tu autem.

D. P. How finely theſe Caneworks looke, being full
of Mirtles: If I had ſo faire and ſpacious alleyes in my
Garden, I ſhould exercise my ſelſe in running at the
ring.

D. A. My father in law will not ſuffer it, for he ſaies
that they break the young ſprouts.

D. P. Whereof is this graffe?

D. A. Of a kind of Pippins.

D. I. Is

D. I. Tiéne pézes éste estánque ?

D. A. Si tiéne : Muchas carpas, y algunos vár-
bos.

D. P. De todos los pescados de agua dulce, el me-
jor à mi gusto es la trucha.

D. I. Ninguno me agrada mas que la anguilla, si
es pequeña.

D. A. No son malas las lampreas.

D. P. No les deuen nada las sabógas.

D. I. El Mayorázgo del Conde de Sastago mutió
con la espina de vna.

D. P. Que lindos clauéles ; quíero hazér una
milléte con licéncia del señor Don Alonso.

D. A. V. m. la tiéne para disponér de todo a su
gusto. Quiero ayudárle a cogér las flores.

D. P. No querria que v. m. me hiziese esa mer-
céd, porque para quién es, lo estimará en mas, si sabe
que yo las he cogido.

D. A. Séa como v. m. mandáre.

D. I. La fléma es buéna : tóme acábe, ésta rosa, y
éste clauél encarnádo. Ponga destas violas blancas,
amarillas, y morádas.

D. P. V. m. señor Don Juan, tiéne espíritu de
contradicción.

D. I. No, sino estémonos aquí todo el dia. Vá-
monos.

D. P. Entrémos a veér la caualleríca del señor
Don Alonso.

D. A. No verán tantos, ni tan buénos cauállos,
como en las de vs. ms.

D. I. Ayér compré vn morcillo, que me costó seys
cientos ducados. No es malo este alaçán.

D. P. Alacán. costádo, antes muerto que cansado.
Quiére

D. I. Is there any fish in this Pond ?

D. A. Yes many Carpes, and some Barbels.

D. P. Of all freshwater fish, I like a Trout the best.

D. I. None pleaseth me better then the Eele, if it
be a small one.

D. A. I account Lampries no ill fish.

D. P. Shaddes are not inferior to them.

D. I. The Count of Sastago his eldest Sonne was kil-
led with a bone of one.

D. P. What faire Gilliflowers be here ; I will make
a Nosegay with Señor Don Alonsoes leane.

D. A. You haue it to dispose of all at your pleasure.
He helpe you to gather the flowers.

D. P. I would not haue you doc me that fauour, for
sþefor whom it is, will esteeme it the more, if she know
that I haue gathered them.

D. A. Be it as you please.

D. I. I thinke you will never haue done : make an
end, take this Rose, and this Carnation Gilliflowres, put
to these white, yellow, and tauny Violets.

D. P. You Señor Don Iohn haue a spirit of contra-
diction.

D. I. No, but shall we stay here all day ? Lets goe.

D. P. Let us goesee Señor Don Alonsoes stable.

D. A. You will not see somany, nor so good horses,
as there be in your owne.

D. I. Yesterday I bought a little blackish horse, that
cost me six hundred Duckets. This browne sorrell horse
is no ill one.

D. P. A browne sorrell is sooner dead then wearied.
Will

Quiére lo v. m. trocár por mi Ouero?

D. A. Si v. m. se quiére seruir del, puéde: mas trocárlo, no.

D. P. Beso las de v. m. por la que me háze.

D. I. Bueno es éste pôtro: que edád tiéne?

D. A. Dos áños. Que le paréce a v. m. de este rúcio rodado?

D. I. Bien, pero mas me agráda este váyo. Ha visto v. m. mi acanéa?

D. A. Si señór: de quién la compró v. m.

D. I. Troquéla por mi yéguia

D. A. Quantó le tornáron encina?

D. I. Cincuenta ducádos. Este cauállo blanco cabs négros, es el mejór que v. m. tiéne. De dónde ha comprádo este frisón?

D. A. Mil áños ha que le tengo: el Conde de Miranda me le dió.

D. P. Donde está su cauallerico?

D. A. Jugando, si viéne a mano.

D. P. A fe de quién soy, que es muy curioso: no considerá v. m. con que órden tiéne las guarniciones de los cauállos? Esta silla ginetáno está bien hecha, porque el arçón trasero es muy alto.

D. A. Que le parece a v. m. de ésta?

D. P. Que es al vso. Quántos mócos de cauallos tiéne?

D. A. Nengúno buéno, y quátro que no válen náda.

D. P. Pués nos ha enseñádo su cauallerica, quístre nos su recámara.

D. A. No verán en ella cosa que válgua.

D. I. Dexémox lo para otra vez, que es tarde; porque

Will you change him for my bald horse with the spotted belly?

D. A. If you please to haue him sir you may: but change him I will not.

D. P. I kisse your hands for the fauour which you doe me.

D. I. This coult is a good onc: what age is he of?

D. A. Two yeares old. How like you this dappled gray?

D. I. Well, but this bay horse pleaseth mee better. Haue you seene my nag?

D. A. Yes sir: of whom bought you him?

D. I. I changed him for my mare.

D. A. How much had you to boot?

D. I. Fifty duckets. This white horse with blacke feet, is the best you haue: where haue you bought this Freeeland?

D. A. I haue had him these thousand yeares: the Count of Miranda gaue him me.

D. P. Where is your horse-rider?

D. A. At play if occasion be offered.

D. P. By my faith he is very curious: doe you not consider in what order he hath the harnessse of the horses? This saddle after the Genet fashion is very well made, for that the binder pummell is very high.

D. A. What thinke you of this?

D. P. That it is according to the vse. How many horse-keepers haue you?

D. A. Never a good one, and fourre that are worth nothing.

D. P. Since you haue shewed us your stable, let us behold your wardrop.

D. A. Ye will see nothing in it that's worth any thing.

D. I. Let us leaue that for another time; for if

Señor

porque si el señor Don Pedro éntra vna vez, no lo sacarán de allí arempujones.

D. P. Vámos que al punto saldrémos.

D. I. V. m. es estremádo en todo señor Don Alonso : que de ármas, paréce que estamos en vn Almacén. No nota v. m. la cantidad de mosqués, arcabúzes, escopétas, pistolétes, y pistolas?

D. P. Estas lánças son bonísimas para tóros : los garrochones no son malos si fuérán mas largos. Iesús, que de chúcos ?

D. A. No téngo tantos que el otro dia no se me suéssen dos hermosíssimos jaualics, por no tener quattro mas.

D. I. Si v. m. huuiéra embiádo à mi cásá, hallará en élla los necesarios, y si hauía menestér algunos venáblos también.

D. A. Béso las manos de v. m. por la mercéd : las alabárdas suplen la fálta, particularmente quando voy à caça de ósos.

D. P. Esta es vna caça que aborrézco mucho, la de sa córra me agráda mas que ningúna otra.

D. I. No es mala la de venádos. Ayér fuy' a caçár con mi vrón. Don Aluaro me díxo el otro dia, hauía muerto tres liébres tan grandes, como tres nouillos.

D. P. Por mentir no se paga alcanála : que si se pagásse, no tenía esse caualléro renta para pagár las que ha hecho en vn año. A mi me díxo antes de ayér que hauía caçádo en vna noche cincuenta perdi-zes a la lantérra ; y si huuiéssse de contár las mentíras que cada dia me dice, sería nunca acabár : pero cómo antes alcánçan al mentiroso, que al cójo, Le cogí ayér en vna tal, que por respécto del parentesco la cálló. Lo mejor dexáuamos por veér ; que son estas valléstas,

Señor Don Pedro but get in once, one shall hardly boulder him out againe.

D. P. Come let us goe, wee'le haue done instantly.

D. I. You are extremely curious in all, Señor Don Alonso : what a company of armes ; me thinks wee are in a storehouse. Doe you not obstrue the quantity of Muskets, Arquebusses, Guns, Dags, and Pistals ?

D. P. These Lances are excellent for bulls : The Darts be not ill if they were longer. Iesús, what a company of Speares !

D. A. I haue not so many but that the other day two most goodly Boares escaped me, for want of fourre more.

D. I. If you had sent to my house, you should there haue found all necessaries, and if neede had beeine some Iauelins also.

D. A. I kisse your hands sir for the fauour : hal-berts supply the want, particularly when I goe hant Beares.

D. P. It is a chase which I much hate, that of the Fox I like better then any other.

D. I. That of the Hart is not ill. Yesterday I went to exercise my Ferret. Don Aluaro told the other day, that bee had killed three Hares, as bigge as three bul-lockes.

D. P. There is nothing to be paied for lying: if there were, that Gentlemans reuenues would not be sufficien to pay for the false tales, which in one tweluenoneth be hath made. He told me the other day that in one night he had taken fiftie Partridges with Batfowling ; and if I shoule recount the lies that he every day telleth me, it were never to make an end : but as the lyer is sooner ouertaken then the cripple, I caught him yester-day in such a one, that for respect of his parentage I conceale

valléstas, y árcos? de donde son estos alfánjes?

D. A. De Damasco.

D. I. Tará tenemos para vn mes. Quédase v. m. señor Don Pedro?

D. P. Aguárde, véremos estas espádas, poluón, y perdigones. Solo le falta al señor Don Alonso una mugér.

D. A. Todo me sobra, no la teniendo.

D. I. Plática han comenzado, que el diablo aguárde.

D. A. Suplico a v. ms. me la hagan en quedarse a hazer penitencia.

D. I. Harta haza quien aguarda a la fléma del señor Don Pedro.

D. P. Y mucha mas quién sufre la colera de v. m. No puedo recibir la del señor Don Alonso.

D. I. Ni yo tan poco.

D. P. Quando nos veremos?

D. A. Quando v. m. fuere servido: si quieredel-
pués de comer.

D. P. Séa así, porque querría que viése dos
cuadros, que sin falta le agradarán.

D. I. Déxe nos yr señor Don Alonso.

D. A. Mucha merced recibiría que no lo hizi-
essen.

D. P. Dígale a su suégro que le beso las manos, y
que el señor Don Juan, y yo hemos venido a besár-
se las.

D. A. Haré lo que v. ms. me mandan, y le diré
la que le han hecho, y de la que he recuérdo de recu-
dida,

conceale it. We leave the best unseene; what ones are
these Crossbowes and Longbowes? From whence come
these Semiters?

D. A. From Damasco.

D. I. We haue a task for a whole moneth. Doe you
remaine heere Señor Don Pedro?

D. P. Stay, we will see the swords, powder, and shot.
Señor Don Alonso wanteth nothing but a wife.

D. A. I haue all things plentifully, not having her.

D. I. They haue begun a discourse which the devill
will not make an end off.

D. A. I beseech yee doe me the fauour as to stay to
take penance.

D. I. He taketh enough that attendeth the slownesse
of Señor Don Pedro.

D. P. And much more he that suffereth the basti-
nesse of your selfe. I cannot accept of the curtesie which
Señor Don Alonso doth me.

D. I. Nor I neither.

D. P. When shall we see againe?

D. A. When it shall content you. After dinner if you
please.

D. P. Be it so, for I desire to haue you see a couple of
square pictures, which without doubt will bee to your
liking.

D. I. Let vs goe Señor Don Alonso.

D. A. I should take it for a great fauour that yee
would not.

D. P. Tell your father in law that I kisse his hands,
and that Señor Don Iohn, and I haue come to visit him.

D. A. I will obey yee, and will tell him of the honor
that yee haue done him, and will acquit my selfe of that
which

dida, me esquitaré.

D.P. Si passa por casa de doña María, no déxe de
hablárle, y tóquele en aquél negocio.

D.A. Yo me tengo buén cuidado.

D.I. Ay mas que encomendár?

D.A. V.M. tiene enbídia de la que el señor Don
Pedro me háze.

D.P. Diga, que de Diós dixéron.

D.I. Vámos de aqui.

D.P. Vamos. Hasta que hora aguardaré a v.M?

D.A. Hasta las tres.

D.P. Si no viéne a las tres, me yré adonde sabe;
al juégo de pelóta, o a casa del tablagéro.

D.I. Y si no, dê vn reál a vn pregonero, que lo
pregóne.

D.P. Aguárde.

D.I. El diáblo que lo espere.

D.P. A Diós que se va enojado.

D.A. A Diós.

Fin del Dialogo quarto.

DIALOGO

dida, me esquitaré.

D.P. Si passa por casa de doña María, no déxe de
hablárle, y tóquele en aquél negocio.

D.A. Yo me tengo buén cuidado.

D.I. Ay mas que encomendár?

D.A. V.M. tiene enbídia de la que el señor Don
Pedro doth use.

D.P. Diga, que de Diós dixéron.

D.I. Vámos de aqui.

D.P. Vamos. Hasta que hora aguardaré a v.M?

D.A. Hasta las tres.

D.P. Si no viéne a las tres, me yré adonde sabe;
al juégo de pelóta, o a casa del tablagéro.

D.I. Y si no, dê vn reál a vn pregonero, que lo
pregóne.

D.P. Aguárde.

D.I. El diáblo que lo espere.

D.P. A Diós que se va enojado.

D.A. A Diós.

which by his default I haue received.

D.P. If you passe by Doña María's house, forget
not to speake to her, and touch her in that busynesse.

D.A. I shall be carefull thereof.

D.I. Is there yet more to recommend?

D.A. You doe enuy the fauour which Señor Don
Pedro doth use.

D.P. Let him say what he will, men haue spoken
well of God before now.

D.I. Let us away.

D.P. Let's goe. Till what houre shall I expect you?

D.A. Till threes a clocke.

D.P. If you come not at three, Ile goe you know
whither, to Tennise, or to the Dicing-house.

D.I. And if not, give six pence to a Cryer, that he
may proclaime it.

D.P. Stay.

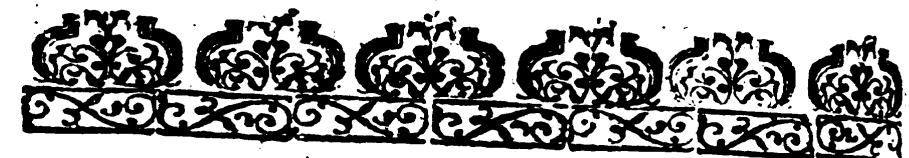
D.I. The devill it is that staines for you.

D.P. Farewell, for he is angry.

D.A. Farewell.

An end of the fourth Dialogue.

THE



DIALOGO QUINTO, ENTRE VNA DAMA, vn Escudero, vna Doncella, y vn Page.

P. Mi señora quiere yr à Milla.

Ef. Ira en Coche?

P. Si, sino va a pie.

Ef. Tanto dixerá vn asno, si supiera hablar.

P. Sin yr en Coche, podía yr en silla de manos, en litéra, en carro, o en barco.

Ef. Bachillér de Sarmentéra, si le tomo, le daré vna mano de cózes, que no se las quite su madre.

P. No se enóge señor Peralta, que se hará viejo.

Ef. No llégues a mis días vellaco desvergonzádo: Yo te juro por vida de mis hijos, que si te alcánço, te daré vn puntapié, que dé con ti en aquella paré.

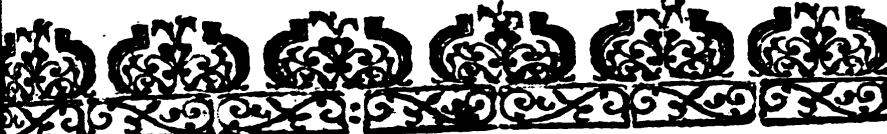
P. Si me cóge, yo le doy licéncia.

Don. Mendocica, que te lláma mi señora.

Dam. Que hazías allá bajo?

P. Dezia al Escudero, que v. m. querría yr a Milla.

Dam.



**THE FIFT DIALOGUE
BETWEENE A LADY, AN
Usher, a Waiting Gentlewoman,
and a Page.**

P. M^r Lady will goe to Mass.

Vf. Will she goe in her Coach?

P. Yes, if she goe not on foot.

Vf. So much an Aſſe would say, if hee knew how to speake.

P. Beside her Coach, she might goe in a Chaire, in a Litter, in a Chariot, or in a Barkē.

Vf. Thou whorson prater, if I catch thee, Ile so be-labour thee with kickes, that thy mother shall not take them off againe.

P. Be not cholerickē Señor Peralta, youle make your selfe looke old.

Vf. Thou'lt never come to my yeares, thou shameſſe villaine. I sweare unto thee that if I get thee, I will give thee ſuch a kicke with my toe, that ſhall ſtrike thee againſt the wall.

P. If you catch me, I give you leave.

G. Mendocica, my Lady calls thee.

L. What mad'ſt thou there below?

P. I told your Uſher that you would goe to Mass.

Lad.

Dam. Y por ello corría tras ti?

P. Si señora.

Dam. Tu miéntes, yo te conózco, que eres vn costál de malicias, y vn mátalas callando, que no haces sino perseguir a este pobre viejo. Ve a casa de la señora doña Francisca de Montagudo, dile que le beso las manos, que me haga saber como está, y adonde irá a Milla; que si me aguárda en ella, yré por allí, yrémos juntas. Ven presto. Saluatierra, llámala Peralta.

Don. Señor Peralta, mi señora le lláma.

Ef. Que manda v. m?

Dam. Id al conuento de los Mercenários, y decid al Padre Comendadór que le beso las manos, que me la haga en hazérme guardár vna Milla, que se diga por mi intención en el altár precuilegiádo, y dadle vn real por la limosna.

Ef. Dos piden, si ha de ser en este altár.

Dam. Dad se los.

Don. Que le decía a v. m. aquél rapáz, señor Peralta?

Ef. Es el mayor vellaco que ay en el mundo, y mi señora le da alas.

Don. No diga eso, que por vida de mi Padre, que le ha reñido.

Ef. Sino huiéra huy'do, yo le enseñara como se hauía de burlár de vn hombre honrrádo.

Don. Yo le prometo que mi señora le hará castigar como merece, y que no lo váya a pagár al otro mundo.

Ef. Si ella no lo haze castigar, no irá a Roma, por penitencia. Saldrá luégo de casa?

Don. A las once. Que ora es?

Ef. Las

Lad. And for that did he run after thee?

P. Yes Madame.

Lad. Thou lyest, I know thy tricks, thou art a sache of malice, and an Hypocrite that dost nothing but persecute that poore old man. Goe to Doña Francisca of Montagudo, tell her I kisse her hands, that I desire to know how she doth, and where she will heare Mass; that if she stay within for me, I will goe that way, and we will accompany one another. Come againe quickly. Saluatierra call hither Peralta.

Gen. Señor Peralta, my Lady calls you.

Vf. What is it you command me?

Lad. Goe to the conuent of the Almeyry, and tell the Father Comendadór I kisse his hands, and that I request him to doe me the fauour to keepe me a Mass, that may be said for my intention at the pruiledg'd Altar, and giue him a Real for almes.

Vf. They demand two, if it be at that Altar.

Lad. Give it them.

Gen. Señor Peralta, what did that ranenous boy say to you?

Vf. He is the veriest Rogue of the world, and my Lady maintaines him in't.

Gen. Doe not say so, for I vow that she bath chidden him.

Vf. Had he not bin too nimble for me, I would haue taught him to haue flouted an honest man.

Gen. I can assure you my Lady will make him bee corrected as he deserueth, and that hee goe not to pay for't in another world.

Vf. If shee doe not make him bee corrected, bee'le met haue unto Rome for penance. Wilt shee goe forth presently?

Gen. At nine. What a clocke is it now?

V

Vf. Ten

Eſ. Las diez. Voy me preſto, antes que ſea maſtarde. A Dios.

Don. A Dios Señor Peralta.

Dam. Saluatierra.

Don. Señora.

Dam. Pensáys que me tengo de uestir oy?

Don. Si, ſi v. m. es ſeruida.

*Dam. Dad me vna camíſa, con pechadúras ne-
gras. Eſte corpíño me es ancho. Que ſeruillas me
days ay?*

Don. Las de ayér. Que buena colór de laços!

Dam. No me agrádan por ſer vérdes.

*Don. A mi me paréce, que es la mejor colór que
áy, por ſer ſímbolo de la esperáncia.*

*Dam. A mi me enfáda por ſer tan ordinaria, que
no áy parte donde no ſe hálle. Dadme las ruedas
de nacár, ligaſ vérdes, con rapacéjos de oro. Que
chapines me dáys ay?*

*Don. Los dorádos, con víras de pláta: quiére v.
m. otros mas váxos?*

Dam. No. Eſte Faldillín eſtá muy desblaydo.

Don. Buena nuéua para mi.

*Dam. Toma os le, y dad me el de grana, con pa-
ſamáños de oro.*

*Don. Béſo las de v. m. mil vézes por la que me
háze.*

*Dam. Esta vasquiña de terciopélo es muy peſadá
dad me otra de ráſo, o de tafetán.*

Don. Quiére v. m. el jubón de tela de oro?

*Dam. Dádme el que quisiéredes y ſea preſto.
Traéd vn pocó de albayálde, y de colór. Que áqua
es éſta?*

Don.

Vſ. Tens I goe instantly, ere it be later. Farewell.

Gen. Farewell Señor Peralta.

Lad. Saluatierra.

Gen. Madame.

*Lad. Doe you thinke that I ſhall need to make mee
ready to day?*

Gen. Yes, if it ſo please you.

*Lad. Give me a ſmooke, wrought on the breft with
blacke. These bodies are too wide for me. What pumps
doe you give me there?*

*Gen. Thoſe you wore yesterdaу. What a good colour
the ribbands be of.*

Lad. I like them not, for that they are greene.

*Gen. Me thinkes i'is the beſt colour that is, being
the ſymbole of hope.*

*Lad. And I am weary of it, because it is ſo ordina-
ry, that one ſhall finde it in every place. Give mee the
ſtockings of pearle colour, my greene garters fringed
with gold. What high corke ſhoes doe you ſet mee?*

*Gen. The gilt ones, with plates of ſiluer: will you
haue others that be lower?*

Lad. This petticoate is very muſh faded.

Gen. Good newes for mee.

*Lad. Take you it, and give me that of scarlet, with
gold lace.*

*Gen. I doe moſt humbly thankē you for this fa-
vour.*

*Lad. This kirtle of velvet is very heauy, give me
another of Sattin, or of Taffata.*

Gen. Will you haue your doublet of cloth of gold?

*Lad. Give me which you pleaſe, and let it be quickly.
Bring a little white and red. What water is this?*

Gen.

Don. De lustre. Vn gato rompió el otro día vn pote de Alcohól, y vna redoma de agua de Angeles.

Dam. Mas quisiera que huviéra rompido todos los vídrios de cása. Dádme las pincetas. El vello me crece tanto, que paréce lo tóma a estajo.

Don. A mi me paréce se arránca mejor con vna ctra de séda, y con mas breuedad.

Dam. Assí es, pero háze mas mal. Las céjas se me pelan, y así me es forçoso hazérlas cada dia. Están bien?

Don. Como héchas de nuéuo.

Dam. Los diéntes se me dánan: Dad me los poluios, hiéles, y vntos, para limpiárlos.

Don. Muchas damas áy, que se lóan, y precian de tenérlos tan blancos como piñones, que no llégan con quinze, y falta à los de v. m.

Dam. No sé de que se me arúga la frénte: No cierto de los años.

Don. Mil doncéllas áy, que ayér salieron (legun ellás dízen) de mantillas, que puéden ser madres de v. m.

Dam. Peinádme bien. Paréce que tengo algunos cauéllos blancos: son cánas?

Don. No son, sino lunáres.

Dam. Burláyfós de mi?

Don. Nunca Diós tal permítá; pero paréce me, que segun la poca edád que v. m. tiéne, es imposible serlo.

Dam. Quanta pensáys que tengo?

Don. No muéstra v. m. tenér véynte y dos años.

Dam. No penséys yr muy engañáda: que aunque mi nieto tiéne véynte, yo téngo muy pocos mas; porque

Gen. Of lustre. A cat the other day broke a pot of Alcohol, and a viol of water of Angels.

Lad. I had rather he had broken all the glasses in the house. Giue me the little pinsers. The haire grows so fast, it seemeth that it hath taken it to taske.

Gen. Me thinkes, with a thred of silke it commeth up better by the roote, and that more speedily.

Lad. It is true, but it does more hurt. My eye-browes pill, and so I am constrained to make them euery day: Are they well?

Gen. As if they were new made.

Lad. My teeth are spoiled: Reach me the powders, galles, and oyntments to make them cleane with.

Gen. There be many Ladies that praise themselves, and boast of having them as white as the kernels of a Pine-apple, which haue not fifteene in their heads, and those black in comparison of yours.

Lad. I know not why my fore-head growes wrinkled: It is not surely with age.

Gen. There are a thousand young maids, that went but yesterday (as they say) out of their swaddling clouts, which well may be your mothers.

Lad. Combe me thorowly. Me thinkes I haue some white baires: are they gray ones?

Gen. No, but of a pale colour like the Moone.

Lad. Doe you mocke me?

Gen. God forbid that; but I take it, that according to your little age, it is impossible to be so.

Lad. How old doe you think I am?

Gen. You doe not make shew to be above two and twenty.

Lad. Doe not thinke that you are much deceived: for though my nephew be twenty, I am but little more; for

porque su madre y yo, nos casámos niñas, mas ay cuya ! que en passando las mugéres de véynte años, nos llaman viéjas. Dadme otros cercillos, y otras arracádas. Trençadme bien : que cintas son ellas ?

Don. Aculés.

Dam. Con ración dirá Don Sancho que tengo zélos ; y en mi alma, que los tiéne el mayóres de mi.

Don. Y con ración.

Dam. Porqué ?

Don. Pórque la hermosura, los causa siempre.

Dam. No tiéne de que tenerlos ; aunque si yo diéisse cýdos a los muchos que me solicitan, y andan muertos por mi, no se escaparía de la comun miseria, de que pocos de los que tiénen mugéres hermosas escapan : mas la honrra que hasta aóra me ha dado fuérças para resistir a los muchos contrásts, hará que lléue adelante mi buen desseo, aunque bien sé que no faltan murmuradóres.

Don. Serán los despreciados ; que quando no puéden cogér el fructo de sus deseos, se tornan, como el pérro, al palo. Quiére v. m. la gargantilla depérlas ?

D. Dádme la que quisiéredes. Ponédme el cintillo de diamantes.

Don. Quiére v. m. ponérse ésta ropa de riço ? o la de tafetán mosqueteado ?

Dam. Ni la vna, ni la otra : dádme la deterciopélo liso : venga la gorguera, los púños, la cadéna de coráles, mi rosario, guantes, y manguito : no olbidéys mis horas. Quien está ay ?

Don. El Páge.

Pa. La señora Doña Francísca bésa las de v. m. mil vézes por la que le háze, que está a seruicio de

v. m.

for that his mother and I were maried when we were little ones. But O vexation ! that passing once twenty yeares, they call us women old. Give me other Eare-rings, and pendants. Plat my haire well : what ribbands be those ?

Gen. Blew ones.

Lad. Don Sancho will say with reason that I am icalous ; and on my soule, himselfe is far more then I.

Gen. And it is reason.

Lad. Why ?

Gen. Because beauty doth alwyses occasion it.

Lad. He bath not any cause to be so ; although if I gaue eare to so great a company as solicite me, and are almost dead for me, he shoul d not be able to auoid the common miserie, from which but few that haue beauti-ous wifes escape. But the honour that bath hitherto giuen me force to resist the many strifes, will cause me to passe further in my good desire, although I am not ignorant that there want not murmurers.

Gen. They be those which are themselves despised ; who when they cannot gather the fruit of their desires, they turne as the dog to the cudgell. Will you haue your carkanet of pearle ?

Lad. Give me which you please. Put me on my gir-dle of Diamonds.

Gen. Will you haue on this gowne of unshorne Vel-vet, or that of taffata with small pinkes ?

Lad. Neither the one, nor the other : Give me that of plaine velvet. Bring me my gorget, my ruffe-cuffs, my chaine of Corall, my beads, gloues, and mufle : doe not forget my Heures : Who's there ?

Gen. The Page.

Pa. Doña Francísca kissteth your bands a thousand times for the fauour you doe her, being ready to doe you

v. m. y que por oy no piensa salir de casa, por hallarse vn poco indisuesta.

Dam. Peralta tarda mucho, mirad si ha venido.

Don. Si señora, y dize que vn fráyle aguarda a v. m. vestido en el altár.

Dam. Que gallarda necesidad! porque no me lo hauíades dicho antes?

Don. En este punto acaba de llegar.

Dam. Vamos presto, hazed lleuar vn maridico porque haze frio. Que hora es Peralta?

Ej. Las onze, tres quartos, y medio.

Pa. Válate el diablo el viéjo, y que puntuales en sus palabras.

Don. Calla, que si te oye se dará a las fúrias: yo le he prometido ésta mañana, que mi Señora te haría castigar.

Pa. El diablo mellue, que si por éste viéjo podrído me açoñássen; no le dexaría barbas en la cara.

Don. Yo le diré para contentarle que te han acoñado.

Pa. No se lo diga, que no, quíero dárle éste gusto. Aquí tengo vn viilete para v. m.

Don. De quién?

Pa. De Don Francisco de Bobadilla.

Don. Lo bueno es que mi señora se persuade, que viene a casa por amor della.

Pa. Así es, pero para que le sirua de alcahueta. Esta Sarra piensa, que el mundo se muere por ella.

Don. Si la huuiéras oydo ésta mañana, rebentáras de rey়; porque diziéndole yo, que no se le echaua de veer tener mas de veinte años, me respondió, que tenía muy pocos mas.

Pa. Verdád es que no son sino quarénta mas.

Escúche,

you seruice; but as for to day she thinketh not to stir forth, because she findes her selfe a little ill.

Lad. Peralta is very long, see if he be come.

Gen. Yes Madame, and saies that a Frier stayes for you readie vested at the Altar.

Lad. What a fine follie is this! Why had you not told me so before?

Gen. He came but very now.

Lad. Let us goe quickly, make a little chafindish be brought, for it is cold. What a clocke is it Peralta?

Vs. Nine, three quarters, and a halfe.

Pa. The devill helpe this old fellow, how punctuall he is in his words.

Gen. Peace, for if he chance to beare thee, hee'lle become furious: I haue promis'd him this morning, that my Lady should make thee be corrected.

Pa. The devill take me, if I should be beaten for this old rotten coxcombe, if I would leane him one baire on his face.

Gen. I let tell him to content him, that thou hast beene beaten.

Pa. Doe not tell him so, for I will not cause him so much pleasure. I haue here a little letter for you.

Gen. From whom?

Pa. From Don Francisco of Bobadilla.

Gen. The best is, that my Lady persuades her selfe he comes to her house for the loue of her.

Pa. True, but to the end that she serue him for a bawd. This old Sarra thinkes the world dies for her.

Gen. Had'st thou heard her this morning, thou wold'st haue burst with laughing, for I telling her that she seemed not to be aboue twentie yeares of age, she made me answer, that she was but a few more.

Pa. It is true that she is but fortie more.

Harke,

Escúche, escuche, como se le quéxa el buen Matu-
lén ; los dos son para en uno. Quiére que le lea este
villéte,

Don. Si, pero lécle váxo, de modo que no lo
oygan.

Pa. Van tan embeuidos, que no oyrian si les gri-
tassen como a sordos. El sobre escrito dice así. A
mi señora doña Lucia Saluatierra.

Don. Acába lécle antes que lleguemos a la
Iglesia.

Pa. Señára desta alma, que no respira, ni tiene otra
vida, sino la que recíue del resplandor de vuéstros se-
réños, y diuinos ojos : suplicoos los mostréys benignos,
y misericordiásoys a mis justos, y humildes ruégos ; los
quáles van encaminádos à sólo suplicáros, saquéys de
prisión, y tormento a este escláu, que por vos pena,
asegurandoos, que la ración que me fuérça, y constri-
ñe a amáros ; essa bará que mi vida, fuérças, salud,
y talento, se emplearán para siempre en vuéstro ser-
vicio : de quien quedo confiado : aunque indigne
amante.

El que viuiendo muere, y muriendo viue,
por amor de vos.

Pa. Par Diós buena ; si esta carta huuiéra reco-
uído mi señora, estuuiéra tan ancha, que le pudié-
ran poner vn nabo por el rabo.

Don. Dame el villéte ; y si le vécs, dile que yo le
daré la respuesta ésta noche, por el balcón a la vna.
Te hás dado algo ?

Pa. Vn real de à quattro, duro como vna pié-
dra, y me ha prometido vna espáda vieja, con
sus tiros.

Don.

Harke, harke, how the good Machusalem complaines,
they are a couple well met. Shall I read you this shone
letter ?

Gen. Yes, but softly, so that they may not heare it.

Pa. Their mindes are so carried away, that they
would not heare should one crie out to them as the deaf.
The superscription saith thus, To my Mistrelle Doña
Lucia Saluatierra.

Gen. Make an end of it before wee come to the
Church.

Pa. Lady of this soule, which hath no life nor be-
ing, save that it receiueth from the splendor of your se-
rene and divine eies : I beseech you shew them benigne,
and pittifull, to my iust and humble petitions ; which
only tend to excite you that you free from prison and
torment this miserable slave, who for you tormenteth,
assuring you that the reason which forceth and constrain-
neth me to loue you, shall make that my life, power,
health, and talent, be employed for euer in your service,
of whom I remaine confident : Although an unmor-
thy louer.

He which liuing dieth, and dying liueth,
for the loue of you.

Pa. By loue a good one ; if my lady had received
this letter, she would haue beene so puft up with glory,
that one might haue thrust a turnep into her taile.

Gen. Give me the letter ; and if thou see'st him, tell
him he shall haue an answer at one a clocke this night,
out at the bay window. Has he giuen thee any thing ?

Pa. A peece of foure Reals, hard as a stone, and he
ha's promis'd me an old sword, with his bangers.

Gen.

Don. Tu sacarás mas del queyo.

Dam. Dádmelos mis Horas.

Pa. Señor Peralta, quiére venir a vna pastelería entre tanto que mi señora oyce Misa ? comeremos un pastel de a real, y cada dos veces de blanco, y váyase al diablo para ruín.

Ef. Tiénes dineros ?

Pa. Un real de a quatro.

Ef. Por Diós tu éres el mejor hombre del mundo ; yo te amo, como si fuésses mi hijo. Vamos adonde quisiéres. Cuérpo de tal, que buéños pastéis.

Pa. No es malo el blanquillo : Nuestra ama pensará que estamos ganando las estaciones.

Ef. Que mejores estaciones, que visitar las hermitas de Baco ?

Pa. Quiére que comámos otro pastel ?

Ef. No áy cosa en el mundo que te dé gusto, que a mi no me agráde ; mas despachémos, que la Misa se acabará.

Dam. Donde está Peralta ?

Don. Allí viéne con el page, Ya han hecho las amistades.

Dam. De donde venís ? Algunas veces estás como perros, y gatos, otras perecéys la maça, y la mona.

Don. De donde venís Mendoça ?

Pa. De refrescar la palabra.

Don. Hauéys estado en la Tauérna ?

Pa. No, pero en vna pastelería.

Don. Tanto se me da ocho como ochenta, si los ocho son diez. Hauéys hecho las amistades ?

Pa. Si, al modo de los montañeses, con la caça en las manos.

Don. De manéra que seréys amigos de racha de vino. Has escotado ?

Gen. Thou shalt get more out of him then I.

Lad. Give me my Hours.

Gen. Señor Peralta will you goe to a Piemakers shop, while my Lady is bearing Masse ? Wee'le eat a sixpenny pyc, and each of us two cups of white wine, and let the Devil be packing for a rogue.

Vs. Hast thou any money ?

Pa. A peece of four Reals.

Vs. By Ioue thou art the best lad in the world ; I loue thee as if thou wert my sonne. Let's goe whither thou wilt. Body of me what good Pies be these.

Pa. The Whitewine is not bad : Our mistresse will thinke we are gaining the indulgence of the stations.

Vs. What better stations be there, then to visit the hermitages of Bacchus ?

Pa. Shall we haue another Pie ?

Vs. There is nothing in the world that may content thee, which not pleaseth me ; but let's dispatch, for Masse will be ended.

Lad. Where is Peralta ?

Gen. There he comes with the Page, they are already friends.

Lad. From whence come ye ? Sometimes ye are like Dogges and Cats, and other times like the Monckie, and his clogge.

Gen. From whence com'st thou Mendoça ?

Pa. From refreshing the throat.

Gen. Hauye beene at the Tauerne ?

Pa. No, but at a Pie-makers shop.

Gen. The ones as good as the other, being both alike. Are yee friends then ?

Pa. Yes, after the manner of the Mountaineres, with a cup in hand.

Gen. So that you'e be good table friends. Hast thou paid the shot ?

Pa.

Pa. Yo lo he pagado todo.

Don. Toma este vizcócho, y estas seys rosquillas que me ha dado el Comendadór.

Pa. Es su deuoto.

Don. No, mas yo lo soy suya, para que me enciende a Diós acuérdate de dar la respuesta del villéte.

Pa. No tiene que encargárme lo: a Diós, que mi Señóra me lláma.

Don. A Diós.

Fin del quinto, y ultimo Dialogo.

Pa. I have paid it all.

Gen. Take this bisket, and these six little rolles which the Comendadór hath given me.

Pa. He is your devoted.

Gen. No, but I am his, to the end that hee recommend me to God. Remember thou to give the answer of the letter.

Pa. You haue nothing to doe to put mee in charge with it: Farewell, my Lady calls me.

Gen. Farewell.

An end of the fifth, and last Dialogue.